

Interracial Love

Introduction

My name is Refilwe molebatsane and i am from mafikeng , I moved to joburg a year ago to further my studies , I go to rosebank college because well my marks were not that good for university and my dad didn't want me to stay at home ,things at home are not easy at all but my dad makes due ,I have thought of prostitution but it's not worth it my dad . i don't live the life that most joburg students have but I don't mind am just happy that I have the opportunity to go school

My roommates and i are not the same they like to party and i don't i just don't want to distract myself , so I stay away ,they just say that I have no social mxm i don't care what they say about me .

I have a boyfriend his name is thabo, thabo is a hot head and thinks he is all that maybe it is because he works but he helps me somtimes with money and buy food and other necessities and i really appreciate his help but i don't like that he thinks that he owns me I just suck it up because i need his help

Who you fall in love with is completely out of your control , the heart wants what it wants and there is nothing you or the ones around you can do about it .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 1

Refilwe

I just woke and the sun is hitting my face , thank God its Saturday today because am tired , I couldn't sleep because my roommates were so loud last night having a party or whatever that was.

I went and took a shower and i wore my blue jean , white tee and a nike kicks that my dad bought for me last months

See let me explain my family dynamics and see why i only talk about my dad , my parents only had two kids me and my sister , my mom is super and i mean super tight with my sister and i have never got the same love and attention from her but i didn't mind because my dad was always there , i don't know why but me and my mom just don't click , I once stole her brush to have a DNA test just to make sure I was her daughter.....yes that is how bad it is .

Okay back to the story , I am meeting thabo today for breakfast he said he wants to talk with me And knowing him i should not be late

After i am done I just take an apple and head out, i arrive at the mall (walking distance) and am 20 minutes early so I go to this book shop next to mug and bean where Thabo and i are meeting

I get to the book and head straight to the romance

books too bad such romance doesn't exist i can only read about i was about to grab this book when some took the same book i pulled away

Me:oh am sorry

Him:it's no problem here you can take it i will find another copy

Okay have you seen changing Tatum am looking at his copy yhuuu the guy is hot shame

Me:thank you

I sit and browse the book

Him: you know I have read that before

Me:so why but it

Him:because it reminds that there is real love out there

Me:oh

Him:yeah what you don't believe in love

Me:not like the ones in books , chivalry is dead

He touched his hurt

Him:who the hell is your boyfriend ?

I laughed

Me:don't ask

He came and sat next to

Him:yeah read that book and your perception on love will change

He stood up

Him:maybe one day we will meet and you will be singing a different song

Me:i doubt

Him:i gave up

He raised as a sign of defeat

Him:it was nice meeting i have to go now

I watched him go away and i realised I didn't even catch his name

Me:yhuuu bloody hell

I stood up and i purchased the book and i went to wait for thabo as i was having my coffee

He walked in 10 minutes later he kissed my cheek and sat down and i put my book down

Him:hi babe

Me:hi ,your late thabo aren't you always preaching to

me that I should never be late

Him:i have a job refilwe ,so I get to be late not you

I chuckled in disbelief

Me:your something else

Him:can we not i really miss yoh i haven't seen you in a while

Me:if you called you wouldn't miss me as much

Him:feisty today aren't we ? Cut the bull fifi

Okay let me shut my mouth before he slaps me like he always does

Me:sorry

Him:good

Me:why am i here thabo , I have to study

Him:no not today your coming to my flat with me

Me:thabo please i have to study

Him:i don't want to hear it refilwe ebile come lets go

He settled the bill and we drove to his flat

Me:i don't like you dragged me here

Him:well suck it up babe

We went inside and he went to sit on his bed and i drank water I tried to take out my book from the paper bag but I knew that would somehow make him mad he lives his attention

Him:come closer

I did and i sat next to him and he kissed my neck ,I tried to stop him but he was persistent

Me:thabo am not in the mood please

He stood up and pulled me with him

Me:wha.....

I felt my cheek hot

Him:you don't get to deny me refile we not after that grocery i bought

He continued and finally had me undressed and he had his way with even though i was not in it , he went to take a shower

Him:you can go now

What !!!??? I didn't even want to argue with him because wow

I wore my clothes and wore them quickly and took everything that was mine and i ran out crying

I can't believe him sometimes how can he do that to me ,he is such an ass ,i caught a taxi and it dropped me of that was close to our flat i got off and walked to it

I arrived and my roommates well two of them were watching a movie

Me:hey guys

The two were mpho and Cindy

Mpho:hi darling we made lunch wanna join

Me:how are you not sleeping now

Cindy :we master partying babe

Me:i know that now

Them:so lunch

Me:am good

Cindy :okay

They continued watching their movie and i went to my room to finish my crying

MIKE

Well my name is Mike Anderson and am 27 years old ,I have several companies but I run the family company we all work her , my sister

Kayla and layla they are 23 and yes they are twins and my brothers , my parents are both retired and we make the income now

I have a girlfriend but were not serious because i don't love her and i have made sure that she knows that.

Today at the book store i met this lovely girl i don't know why but she had me intrigued , I have never dated outside my race so when i felt that initial attraction to her it scared me and i walked away without even getting her name or number..... well Mike it official your an idiot

I don't even hear the door open because i see Emily girlfriend or whatever she is

Her:Earth to Mike

I finally snap out of it

Me:hey heyhow are you

Her:am good sweetie

I stand and i kiss her cheek

Me:hi baby ,are you okay

Her:am good , am so tired, I just went shopping and wow that's a lot of work

Mxm she is a trust fund baby so she has never worked

a day in her life

Me:and your tired because

She rolled her eyes a d sank on the floor

She started yapping and yapping and yes more yapping

And I just continued doing my work and left her talking

I really want to meet that girl again she looks like she has depth .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 2

THABO

I don't care that y'all don't like me I don't give a shit and i don't have a job i am part of a gang that is owned by the Anderson And they are real badass and no one ever dares to mess with them but I have been working in getting my own people but it's tough out there , Mike the leader once shot a man who stole R1000 and he shot him dead yep badass .

And as my for my girlfriend hai that one is where I go when i need good tight pussy other than that I buy her groceries and others she needs i know she will be with

me she is a desperate girl ,I just got to the warehouse
and tonight we are shipping weapons to Russia

I walk in and i find Mike talking to two men

Me:sure boss

He turns to look at with one of his intimidating look

Him:can't you see am busy thabo wait for your turn

And I obey ...after a couple of minutes he comes

Him:make seebthere are no glitches i can't afford that
captain on my ass agian get it

I nod

Him:what can't speak

Me:i meant yes sir

He goes on to overlook everything and he calls out
together us.... his man

Him:i swear if tonight does not go to accord i will blow
all of your heads off and i am not joking I will blow it

Man this man is a hot head

Him:okay back to work idiots

And I luagh at that i don't notice that he comes closer

Him:something funny

Me:am sorry sir

Him:you better be

He walked and i went back to work becuae we had to pack up the weaponsman being in a gang is no joke after this am calling refile i need to realise some steam i hate that I work for someone that shit annoys me nxa

MIKE

Today I have to go to rosebank ,I have to donate money there to keep a good reputation for the company ,and yes i know I didn't mention am shady but a nice*laughs*

I get there and i donate , take pictures for PR and then i go to my car ,as i was searching for my car keys i notice that girl was talking to god she is so cute and reserved i can see that about her ,JesusI walk to her and tap her shoulder and she gets startled

Her:what the hell dude

Me:hey am sorry ,i didn't mean to scare you

She has really pretty eyes ,okay what hell why am i being a softie

Me:remember me

Her:yeah Mr romance

I chuckled

Me: you study here

Her:yeah and i want to go now

Me:let me take yoh out for coffee that is

She looked at me

Her:i have no bussines going out with a man Like you

Me:why cause am white

Her:that and you seem i don't know just the person i would hang with

Me:stubborn much

Her:deaf much

She tried to walk away

Me:one cup

She turned to look at me

Her:no

Okay am losing my patience now

Me:okay just one cup please

She raised her hand up in defeat

Her: fine ,I don't even know your name

Me:Mike , Mike Anderson

Her : Refilwe

I can't pronounce that well

Me:is there a easier way to say that

She laughed

Her:just call me Fifi

Me:okay fifi lets go

I put out my hand she passed it , i follwed her and we went out

Me:will you wait

Her:oh sorry

She waited its like she was shy or scared to be seen with meanyway we went to McDonald's and orderd cappuccinos.....people kept on staring at us

Me:don't mind the stares

Her:how can I not

Me:i said stop

She startled and looked downOkay i know felt bad

Her:am Sorry

Me:no am sorry i just want to tap to you thats all

I don't know what happened but she stood up and stormed offFUCK i sacred her off

REFILWE

Okay I couldn't that guy scarse me okay the way he looks at me , he and how dominant he is ,that's not the same cute and calm guy I met at the book store so I left i just couldn't deal with that so I left yhu no

I got to my flat and went straight to my room and called my dad

Phone call

Me:hi daddy

Him:oh sweetie pie how are you, daddy misses you

Oh wow i can't believe how my dad still treats me like am 5

Me:i miss you too dad huh

Him:what's wrong sweetie

Me:am okay am just so tired

Him:do you gave food , and toiletries

Me:i still have those don't worry dad .

Him:so why don't you call your mom

Me:so she can tell me how much of a failure i am

Him:tsontso don't say that

Me:no papa its true i don't want her to insult me I have had it

Him:okay baby i didn't want to upset you my love

Me:thanks dad , let me study okay

Him:okay bye tsontso

I luaghd

Me:bye daddy

I sat there and thought about my life my God it sucks , am not as smart as my sister , am in a abusive relationship , I don't even have friends at all ,because i close off so easy wow what a life I have right.

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 3

Refilwe

Am a gym junkie i forgot to mention,my dad used to be a boxer back in the day so i sort of fell in love but me being me I took it to the extreme and practiced MMA not that i get into fights or anything but I use it to keep fit , my body is very toned but I never show it I wear sweat pants , jeans and shirts nothing tight

When I got to joburg i lost my dad as a trainer but lucky for me I stay next to a gym ,but life is so expensive so I made a seal with the owner that after closing i will clean then I can work out and he agreed ,this month i was able to pay the gym because thabo felt generous or should i say guilty for having sex with me forcefully , I don't know why i have to take so much crap from him....I wish life was not so much about money i kick drop his and then leave him .

I wore my gym wear and went to the gym because i had a class only in the afternoon so yay for me it means gym till i want to

I start by warming up and doing stretches ,after i jump on my skipping rope for 15 minutes,about 50 squats ,then I go for lunges And then sits ups that takes me about an hour after I head the the tread i run for minutes non-stop on high intensity and medium incline ,see i have a routine and i don't like messing it up,I got of the tread mill to have some water when i was met by the owner he is an old gentlemen that I have grown

fond off

Him:damn women how do you go for it with no rest

I laugh

Me:am stressed papa so I have to calm myself sown

Him:i am glad you were able to pay the gym because i know get to see what you do keep it up ngwanka

Me:tankie papa

I kissed his cheeck and went back to working out ,i put on my heads this time ,my boxing gloves that dad gave me then to the punching bag ,I always imagine thato's when much and kick it ,hey don't judge me I do this to the bag so I don't do it to him .

Man I was punching and kicking that thing it fell of ,oooops ,I hanged it on and carried on my bussines . After my high intensity work out I went to the shower and did my business after as i was about to walk i heard my name called i looked back , ughhh Mike,what's he doing here on this side of the town nogal.

Me:hey Mike

I remembered i stormed of yesterday

Him:man i should not mess with you

I looked at him

Him:i saw that yiur work out

Me:how long have you been here

Him:i blend well

Me:your the only white guy here

He laughed

Him:okay okay i got her as you were giving hell to that punching bag

Me:Okay.....*awkward silence *soooo what yoh want

Him:you

I nervously chuckled

Me:funny

He looked dead serious

Me:i should go

I held my hand

Him:no you don't get to do that shit again

Me:dude i hardly know you

Him:so get to know who knows you might love me

Me:i doubt

Him:you know that

Me:i just do

I went out the gym and started walking he came following oh and he also had his gym wear

Me:stay away Mike

Him:i can't

Me:don't be annoying

He pulled my hand had my waist i swear i had shivers and goosebumps , he looked me straight in the eye

Me:don't do that

Him:what

Me:don't look at that

He came a bit closer to me

Him:what why

Because he is taller than me when he dropped his face inches to mines my knees became

The and bastard noticed

Him:i want to see you

Me:what

Him:am picking you up today around 7

Me:but ...

He went back to the gym leaving me dumbfounded

What the hell was that he doesn't even know where I live nxa

I went back to the flat and luckily I was alone i swear these girls are never around when do they go to school do they even go to school

I quickly changed my clothes because i had to go to class now .

MIKE

I just got of the gym and i after went to the office.

I went in and threw my on the floor next to the door when my PA chantelle followed me

Her:okay , you have a late lunch date with miss Emily around 5

Me:cancel that

Her:Ooooookay.....other than that you have nothing scheduled other than over looking and and singing contracts

Me:okay thanks chantelle

I sat on my chair and overlooked the town , when i heard the door opened

Me:go away am thinking

Him:stop thinking ass hat i miss you

I turned and i luaghed

Me:Justin what do you want

Justin is my brother

Jay:come on man ; i told you

I turned and looked at him

Me:okay bro

I stood up and we hand shaked see me and Justin were different he is free spirited and in check with his emotion and i on the other hand well am different i like people to be scared of me and if they are am okay

Him:so where is your girl , I think yoh need change

Me:Jay don't start

Him:really what do you seen in that pop tart

Me:pop tart

Him:you heard me

I just laughed

Him:mayne you should his it up a bit and leave blonde
Barbie try brunette maybe

Me:that's what you call change

I took off my jacket

Him:yeah

I thought about fifi and hey gorgeous body

Me:what about a different race

He looked at me

Him:differnt race

Me:you heard me Justin, I keep on finding these girls
because you know i have never tried anything maybe
like chocolate

He laughed so hard

Me:am serious Jay

Him:not when your dad is dad

Me:you know i don't give a shit abiut he thinks i make
him money already

Him:wait your seriouswait who is she

Me:what

Him:you have that look.....you slay bitch

Me:Justin shut up

Him:oh my fucken God yiur into that now , so unexpected

Me:get the fuck out of my office and don't be late to the warehouse tomorrow

He was leaving

Me:JUSTIN *I roared *

Him:geez you are an ass hat i will make it early sir

He left and i started thinking an how am going to impress fifi that girl is weird i never have to work hard to make a girl want or maybe because she is black.....oh whatever am going to make her mineshe is hot and abs for days .

I went to rosebank to meet her I leaned against my car and waited for her , i saw and as soon as she saw me she tried to maneuver her in the crowd but I ran after her and pulled

Me:really

She laughed in defeat

Her: fine Mike you got me

I pulled her to the car and i went in too and drove off

Looks like i have to pull out all the stops

Interracial Love

Insert 4

She was quiet the entire time and didn't say nothing so
I took it upon myself to make sure talks

Me: really

Her:.....

Me: you know am still taking you on a date i don't care
if your not talking to me

Her: it's not a date

Whatever its a date to me

Me: so you really kick butt like your Mike Tyson

Am trying people

Her: not sure about Mike Tyson but I make due when i

have to

I laughed

Me:your cute

Her:flattery will get you now where

I looked at her

Me:hey let a man try

She laughed

Me:oh there is the ice queen is melting

Her:yhuu monna o bathong

Him:Okay now that's just cruel babe

She laughed

We arrived at my building i lived at the apartment on the last floor ,we got off the car and she looked at the building

Her:are we in sandton

Me:yes

Her:huh I've never been here before ,it's so beautiful

Me:yeah it is ,come lets go

I took her hand and we walked i then to the elevator
then inpressed 19

Her:geez that many floors

Me:yeah i live on the last one

Her:Fancy , but that doesn't explain your choice of gym

Me:i like the scenery

Her:okay Mr fancyyou confuse me

The elevator dinged and her eyes widened

Her:how rich are?

She walked in and dropped her bag and i picked it and
hanged , okay am bit of a neat freak and clearly she is
not

Her:everything is so white

Me:i like white okay

She laughed

Her:the irony of it all

We laughed

Me:what would you like to eat were having our date
her

Her:whatever the chef recommends

Oh thank she is getting comfortable

Me:okay let me go change

I went and i wore my boxers and i stayed shirtless i went back to the kitchen and she was going through my book collection

Me:earlier you said i confuse*she nodded * care to elaborate on that?...but firts wine

Her:please

She was looking at me and was coming closer to the table where am chopping veggies and i handed her , her wine

Her:thanks

Me:okaaaay.

Her:it's just that one moment your sweet and loving and then the next your an total ass with his head up butt hole

I laughed

Me:okay wow

Her:yiur probably one of those white boys that think everything centers around them and that they deserve everything the work has to offer

Me:thas pretty judgemental

Her:just my thoughts

Me:okay ,can i tell you what i think of you

She sat on the counter just next to me

Her:continue

All this time she is taking in every part of my body , I can tell

Me:you probably have a whole family with one sibling am guessing sister so your mother gave her all the attention so that's why your daddies girl ,taught you everything you know about the gym and for martial arts skills and you never got fashion advise from mommy hence you wear jeans onlyhow close was i

Her:actually dead on.....except i taught myself martial arts my dad taught me how to box

I told she has depth

Me:your very closed why?

Her:my boyfriend made me like thisI used to like laughing you know

Me:you have a boyfriend

She nodded

Her:a total asshole of a boyfriend to be clear

Me:why are you still with him then

I was now dishing up , i made salmon and stir fry

Her:he gets me through life

Me:that's not love

Her:don't start

Me:here

i gave her her plate and sat next to her next to the counter , I then refilled her glassshe then took her jersey and she dropped it in the floor

Me:stop doing that

She laughed , got down from the counter and picked the jersey up and folded it and put it next to her , she rolled her eyes

Me:don't do that

I brushed her thigh as I placed myself next to her , while she had her eyes closed

Her:don't turn me into a cheater please

I laughed ...Okay that gave me the courage at least i know i tempt her I got off the counter again and i stood

in front of her she put her plate down and looked at me
, her eyes have grown smaller

Her:what you doing?

I pulled her legs open and stood between her legs , I
wanted her

Me:tell me if am making you uncomfortable

Her:you are

Me:well i don't give a shit

She chuckled

Her:your not fair you know

Me:why

I don't what happened but she kissed and well that's
what i wanted so I weekend the kiss as I held in to her
ass ,which felt a bit huge, why is she hiding this body
and am not used to huge asses so I was a bit too happy .

REFILWE

I don't why but I kissed him ,I wanted to know how it
will feel and right now am not even thinking about
thabo and oh boy i am getting carried away because i
don't have my shirt on

Him:i have to work harder now look at you

Me:you really want to talk now

He kissed me again and he carried me to the couch as I had my legs wrapped around his waist , he put me on the couch and was on top of me , he was playing with my great with one hand and the other hand was on my ass , he took my jean of in a split second was now pleasuring me oh god that asshole never does this for me , his lounge was doing things i don't know in my nuna and the sensations i felt were out of this world

Him:God you taste so good

I couldn't talk beacuse I was busy moaning and i had one of best orgasms ever , and because i have a boyfriend its odd the best orgasms i have had SO FAR *note that emphasis* is brought by a man muffing me ,he came back to me and we kissed

Him:am not gonna have sex with you

Oh come on

Me:why

Him:i don't share fifi

I like how he says my name

Him:tomorrow for calling him and ending things because i want you

Okay that was blunt

Me:what Mike

He was still on top of me

Him:don't me tell me you don't felt his okay , I want to fuck you and make love to you at the same time but like i said i don't share

Me:i can't just

Him:i will do everything yoh want okay, I will everything for you okay just give me a shot thats all am asking

He flipped and i was now on top of him

Me:your serious aren't you

Him:dead serious

Me:your not drunk Mike right

I was asking this because i want him too

Him:dead serious

Me:am scared Mike , social standards, what people are gonna say And am.....Am

I became teary the same moment

Him:you can say it

Me:am scared of my boyfriendhe.....he gets violent

sometimes and am always at the receiving end

You should see his face

Him:what the fuck

Me:yeah and if i leave himAm.....am scared he will react

Oh great fresh tears rolled up....And that's when he confirmed he is crazy ke

Him:i will be there when you break up with him

Okay does he know how crazy Thabo is

Me:what no...no... don't please

Him:am not changing my mind okay

Oh my god this white boy

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 5

I slept in his apartment because he wouldn't me go , and yes we didn't have sex not that i would've wanted to after he said he would come with , am scared okay thabo has a way of making me feel so small that it takes time for me to build myself again

I just couldn't bring myself to to wake up his cuddle is everything warm , loving and so sincere i have never been treated in this manner so am taking it all in

Him:this is good

I chuckled

Me:what is good

Him:you me ,it's a good feeling

I laughed

Him:am being serious....before i forget call him

Oh no not this

Me:can't we relax

Him:no , am going to beat his ass when i see him today

I got from bed

Me:okay white boy

I was mocking him and he just laughed with a i will show you look

Him:fifi i said call

I exhaled loudly , took my phone and called him he picked up on the 2nd ring

Him:loud speaker

Yihooo okay sir , I did as i was told

Phone call

Him:get your ass home right now Refilwe where the hell are you

Mike stood up from the bed charging at me and i put my hand to stop him

Me:thabo am on my home just wait for me ...Am.....Am coming

Him:where the hell are you anyway why are you being a whore

Tears dropped

Me:i said i was coming

Him:I should slap the senses back to you hurry back your wasting my time

He hanged up and i sank on the floor and Mike was fuming

Him:let's go

Me:can i take a shower

He pulled me , mind you he was the one dressed I only

had his shirt that was half buttoned and am barefoot

Me:Mike

He didn't say anything we got in the elevator and went to the basement of the building and we took his range rover

Me:please please calm down

Him:where are we going

I told him

Me:Mike please calm down for me

Him:please some things need this anger am feeling now

We arrived at my flat and we went to my flat I stood at the door and i banged my head on the door

Mike:open the door

Me:wait

Him:Refilwe open the damn door

I was about to open when the door and thabo pulled me and punched me on the gut

Thabo:i said hurry up

The girls just stood there minding their own bussines and it was not for the first time they do such

Mike charged in and punched him so hard that he went over the couch

Thabo:what the fuck i will beat your ass and kill.....

He looked stunned no what ma i saying he looked shut scared that is something i thought I would ever seen in his eyesfear

Mike:what the fuck thabo

Wait they know each other

Mike:don't you dare move

He obeyed.....Mike came closer to me and kneeled in front of me

Mike:hey....hey are you okay

I was just balling my eyes

Mike :follow me

He stressed thabo and he carried me to his car we got there and i was gobsmacked , he got of the car and as soon as he did he mind he thabo and when he fell down and he went on too kick , thabo was screaming in agony

Mike:find me at the warehouse today 20pm you better show your ass or i swear thabo *he roared*

Thabo:am.....Am.. so

Mike:FUCK OFF MAN

Okay what the fuck is going on , he got in the car and he drove off I was looking outside the window

Him:you okay babe

I should be sad right but am dancing he called me 'babe' wow that really flet god Yhuuu hee bathong

Me:yeah am fine

My voice was sort of shaky

MIKE

That fool , i saw red when i saw who it was , he is gonna get it am one who's emotions somtimes get the better off and i don't care what refilwe saw am not gonna change me

And low-key i think i scared her because she has been looking out the window in the car

I don't want to hide who i am from her so I am taking her to the warehouse with me , she kicks her ass to so I want her to neat the shit out of that boy , he is going to get it but firts i have to make sure my girl is okay

We arrived at my building and went to my apartment and she was still saying anything

Me:how often has he done that huh

Her:more than enough, I should've stoped him I know i can but he has that power to make me feel weak , and like am nothing , am not scared of him am just scared what i might do when i let my emotions out on him , i don't want to be him

Well tough because she is going to beat his ass

Me:come let me see

I raised the shirt she had and and she was a bit bruised

Me:dear god thabo

Her:how do you know him

Me:he works for me

Her:oh

I sat her done and massaged

Her:you don't have to

Me:i want too

Why would you hurt such a gem though some men are idiots am going to make her a queen that she is you watch

My phone ringed and it was my brother i answered it

Him:you dude what the hell man why would you beat your leading men in the field , are you stupid we have a mission in a month

Me:shut up Justin shut up have i beaten up someone for no reason

I was brushing her thigh and she was looking at the top

Him:well no...but.....

Me:don't but me

Him:bro am serious though we need him you know that

Me:Justin don't piss me off please and tell that asshole am not done with him

I hugged up and threw my phone on the table , I was still brushing her thigh and it was dead silent

Her:thank you

Me:anytime

I pulled her close to me and she sat on top of me

Her:you know ,your interesting, I have trying to find a word to describe you but I can't its weird am really good at describing people

Me:Good or bad

Her:it's good , means i get too explore you more

She kissed meOkay am in love....returned the kiss
and it was slow , sensual ...it was something we both
needed

Her:i need to find a place to stay

Me:stay with me

Her:no

Me:please .

Her:Mike please don't beg me , am afraid i won't be
able to say no

What okay am begging

Me:please , please am begging you

She laughed

Her:i don't want to vat'n'sit

Me:marry me then

We both laughed

Her:your stupid

Me:i know am stupid in love

Ohk me and my stupid mouth

Her:okay Mr stupid in love

She laid her head on my chest ,is it bad i never want to let her go and i mean ever

Me:we are going somewhere today

Her:okay

Me:that's a first , your not fighting me

Her:am tired ,and you care so it's okay now

Me:thanks babe

She chuckled And pecked my lips and laid in my chest again

Her:i have no clothes

Me:already taken care of

She exhaled almost like it's been a while since she has ever been relaxed and am happy i offer some comfort

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

At the warehouse

Her:what is a dungeon

Me:head out of the gutter babe

Okay am comfortable with babe Okay people am not moving to fast am just nudging her into the right direction , ohh and right now she looked so sexy , she had on long high boots, with jeans one of my shirts and tied to the side , the curves , the ass yhuu Emily had none of this shit and speaking of her i need to cut her off soon

We make our way in further,there are guns and money everywhereJesus i forgot today we had a audit

Her:what the hell Mike

Me:welcome to the dungeon babe

I widen my hands to be dramatic

Her:Mike

Me:okay fine

I explained to her everything and i mean everything while we were walking down the corridor and then i told her what she had to do

Her:have you lost your mind

Me:okay relax and watch your tongue

Her:i won't beat him up

I laughed and carried on walking , she came behind me telling how much she is not beating him and me telling her that she is

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 6

REFILWE

Bathong Mike , I mean i would like to beat him to a pulp and cut is dick off but am still processing the fact that he has a whole warehouse ,and that he just told me he is a gang leader just like that no let me think abiut or anything he just dives me in , we waljed in and this room where I saw thabo sitting down lauging with this other white guy and much to Mike's annoyance

Mike:did i say have fun

They are both startled when he spoke

Jay:BRO.....*he looked at me*daaaaamn yeah thabo i would kill you too

Okay the brother is crazy , we walked inside the room ,

Thabo looked really scared am still not used to the sight all this time am walking behind Mike i just don't want to fave him

Mike:care to explain why you were hitting a women thabo

Thabo:i didn't she was your women sir am so sorry

This asshole

Mike:are you stupid, or you are just plain ignorant

Thabo:please sir i mean she is my girl what i get to do with her should be no..

I don't what happend i just knew that I had to do that, I back slapped him one of his tooth fell of

Jay:what the hell

Mike:shut up Jay you know what leave yiur useless

He left and i was feeling guilty my dad always told to never use my fighting skills to hurt others

Mike:wanna finish up

I shook my head

Mike:come on now fifi please

Me:i really don't want too

Mike:okay watch me then

He took off his jacket and my God he is ripped , he punched, kicked, threw to a all and he was doing it with so much easewait why is my panty wet geez

After he was done thabo was bloody all over , I helped Mike wear his jacket and he kissed my cheeck that sent shock wave to my body but I want more moss so I pulled him for a kiss and we did all thi time he hands were on my ass the kiss was so good I think i moaned a bit i even forgot thabo was there

He broke of the kiss and held on to my waist

Mike:we should go and relax

Me:i have no problem with that

He turned to thabo who was sitting in a corner like a scolded child

Mike:show up to work tomorrow thabo you hear me

Silence he walked closer and he quickly nodded

Mike:word thabo words

Thabo:yes sir i will....I will show up to work

Mike:Good

He took my hand and we left for his apartment

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

We were now in his apartment, am in his shirt and he has hi boxers on

Him:that's not fair you know walking around like that

Me:what why look at you

Him:no am at the on with the ass

Me:thank God for that right

Him:yeah thank God for that

Me:am starving

Him:so cook

Shit I can't cook

Me:yeah that's one department that I lack ,nwbwr had the time to learn

I went and sat next to him and we were playing with each others hands

Mike:it's nothing we will just order in

Me:okay

I was staring at him a bit and i proceeded to sit on top of him

Him:and

Me:thank you

Mike:i would over and over again

He pulled me in for a kiss and i responded

Him:is it bad that am falling for you this quickly

Me:Nobecause am falling for you too

Okay that was cheesy , the food we ordered came through when my phone ringed it was my dad

Phone call

Me:hi daddy how are you?

Him:oh hi tsontso am good and you

Me:am good but dad you don't sound so good whats wrong

Him:i don't know how to say this but i was retrenced from work today nana

No nono income no tuition money

Him:i managed to pay for the semester but....but i don't know how am going to pay for the last semester

My dad does so much for me and i love him for that

Me:it's.....it's okay dad I will work something out okay don't worry

Him:but princess ...

Me:don't worry dad okay

Him:okay okay sweetie

He hanged up and i was defeated i sat down

Mike pulled me to him

Him:talk to me

Me:it's nothing just my dad he is not okay that's all

Him:oh am sure he will be okay

Me:yes he will be and so wil i

He smirked and he got on top of me

Me:your quick

Him:i am to please but I want us to sleep am tired

Yhuu no man this guy wants me too starve am so horny

but am not gonna tell him that ...I do t want to seem forward

THABO

I am livid at the events of today how dare she get me in so much trouble with my boss , and that boss am going to get my pay back and it's going to be sweet buy for now i will play along

My gang is slowly but surely coming together and i am working so hard that it comes togethr so far i have to guys that are misenaries and i am glad i found them

As for refilewe yena man she in protected by the boss himself that fucker broke my nose just for her ...how does he even know her am going to get her I know i can control there is no way am letting her go ...

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 7

Refilwe

Well life sucks again but am not telling Mike anything instead am dropping out and help my dad survive because my mom hides her money from him ,she justifies by saying that he is the man so he should provide for the family

I sent the school an email and i have to go and sign some things for the refund for the semester my dad paid , that's the money I will use to survive i don't Mike to feel as if he is responsible for me , speaking off this man is the best he just made breakfast for us and yes he is shirtless and i can't stop drooling

Him:stop

Me:I can'tyour so hot

He laughed

Him:why thank you my lady

He kissed my cheek and handed me my breakfast

Him:i have things to take off today

Me:so your not going to explain at all

Him:i don't like explaining myself and am not going to start with you

He said while facing merude And j rolled my eyes at him

Him:do that one more time babe and i swear

Me:what did i do

He pointed me with his fork

Him:that eye thing its annoying

Me:oh whatever

He looked at me and just shook his head

After breakfast he left for work or whatever and i was now left alone in his apartment , I showered then wore the same jeans i had and one oh his buddies, he is stylish for a white bit I must admit i then wore my boots agian took my phone and left .

Before going to the gym i went to the flat and took my gym bag and changed into my gym gear , I was doing my routine at the gym and this time i asked the owner to pair me up with someone for some one on one fighting i needed to realise my stress on someone or something

People were watching us and oh just say inkicked that guys butt that I made him tap , after the fight i did some cardio .

I was getting ready to go when i heard a person stopped me and i thinknibknow her just have to place her name and face and i will know who she is

Me:can i help you

I said wuth an attitude

Her:hey hey i don't bite i just want to talk

She offered me her hand

Her:palesa Ndlovu

Yeah that's who she is she is married to the biggest bussiness man I know s'celo Ndlovu the people are royalty in cape town

I shaked her hand

Me:so what do you want

Her:i can't talk now but please meet me tomorrow I have an offer for you

She handed me her card and i took it

Her:Call me around 12 and i will give all the details

She rushed awayOkay weird

I was walking to go find something to eat when my phone ringed

Me:what

Him:where the hell are you

Wow rude much

Me:excuse me

Him:where.....thehell....are.....you?

Ass

Me:i was at the gym Mike why are you yelling at me ?

Him: am coming stay wherever you are

Me:Fine

Him:yeah fine

Mxm who does he think he is i just left and went to the flat and i went straight to my going to sleep

I need to figure my life out and quick i can't disappoint my dad i just can't ...I dosed off to sleep and i was starving Yhoo he.e

Him:get up

Me:hmmmm

Mike was trying to wake me up

Him:babe wake up please we have to go

I rubbed my eyes while stitting up

Me:what

Him:why did you go I told you to wait

Me:okay controlling much

He pulled me for a kiss

Him:no ,I just wanted to see you that's all

I looked around my room and some of my bags where packed

Me:what's that

I pointed at the bags

Him:oh that.....your moving on with me for a while

Me:ooookay.....why?

Him:i don't like this place and i don't trust thabo to stay away from you and i don't like these whores you stay with.

I laughed at that

Me:i don't want to live with you

Him:i will get you your own place but for now come lets go

He pulled me and he loaded the bags at the car while i was taking some of my things

Him:done

Her:yeah am done

We walked out hand in hand and i noticed people were giving us weird stareswell screw them

We drive off and arrived at his at

MIKE

I lied when i said i would look for a flat for her but she doesn't need to know that so shut it

We got to the apartment and my twin sister were there soon as we walked in they hugged me and gave me a stare while they were hugging her

Kayla: Mikey who is this

Layla :she is pretty i can't

They pulled her to the couch

Me:that is my future wife

They all gasped including refilwe

Fifi:i am

I love how sweet she is

Me:yeah you are

My phone rang and it was one of my associates Joshua , I excused myself while they were grilling my poor baby .

Phone call

Me:speak

Him:still rude i see

I chuckled

Me:that will never change

Him:mxm whatever man, I have some info

Me:regarding what exactly

Him:the Ndlovus are in joburg and are taking over some spots

Me:are they mine

Him:no....no they i are

Mxm tgis idiot i hanged up the phone kyla and lyla had left

Me:did they bother you

Her:no they are actually really sweet unlike your brother who seems to objectify me

Him:you will get used to him

I kissed her cheeck and we cooked togther while getting to know each other more

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 8

MIKE

I was at the warehouse today for the whole to do some auditing i really like do i g things myself and i don't appreciate it unfaithfulness from anyone .

When I heard about the Ndlovu's i didn't have a problem because they were not messing with my territory but I am going to have a close eye on the because i don't want shit from them , they stay away and i do the same

Then I walked in and some of the guys and i notice that the damage i did is still visible serves him right for hitting a women for no reason or for just hitting her in general as I was busy I see that he is coming to me

Me:what do you want thabo am busy and i have no time

Him:ao bossman so now we don't get to talk because you stole ass from me

I chuckled

Me:say that one more and this time i will chop off your nose ...try me thabo

He shrugged

Him: fine whatever

He walked away , okay i got a person to investigate my lady a bit because in all honestly trusting a person is hard for me wether they now my underground dealing or not I am rich and famous so people tend to use me for money or they want to be recognised and that is why i havent slept with her yet .

He sent me an email with everything i need to know and i was fine until i saw that she dropped out of school yesterday why the hell would she do that , I need to solve this , I leave my table a bit to have privacy and i make a phone call to the school telling them to cancel her request to drop out , after I make a transaction to the school that covers the rest of the yearI saw that she dropped out after her dad lost his job its weird because the mom gets 100k in her account per month but why wouldn't she pay for her daughter fees ,I make my way out and weirdly my table is a bit shuffled and out of place .. maybe am just being paranoid i continue workingthat one i need to talk to tonight

.
. .
. .
. .

Her:i didn't see how me not going to school is any of your business

Me:is it so hard to believe that I care about you and that I want whats best

She sits down looking defeated

Her:i just didn't want to bother you okay I didn't want you to look down on me and i don't appreciate you investigating me whatsoever

Me:like i said i careI paid for your academics you don't have to worry now

She narrowed her eyes

Her:you did what now ?

Me:i really don't like repeating myself babe

I said taking out a beer and settling down next to her and she put her legs on my lap

Her:i appreciate you so much right now but please next time ask okay

Me:okay I understand , I understand but I will not apologise for doing whats best for you and i definatly don't regret paying for the fees

Her:thank you so much

She kissed my cheeck and i pulled her to sit on my lap

Me:your so cute

She looked at her wrist watch

Her:Shit

Me:what is it

Her:i have to go Mike , I have an appointment

Me:What appointment

Her:shut up and i find me a hoodie from yiur closet

Me:don't finish my hoodies please

She laughed after a while she came out wearing black ripped jeans , her long thigh high boots and my pink hoodie(yes it's mine) and she had her natural hair tied up she looked so cute yoh I felt jealous not knowing who she is meeting with

Me:so where you going

Her:not sure yet

Me:what

Her:you heard me

She took her bag and phone and went to make a call after that she came and kissed me goodbye

Me:don't come back late

She just laughed at that and made her way out, I looked at the cctv to see who she was meeting downsatirs but she went straight into a Porsche and the car was dimmed so I couldn't see who it was .

REFILWE

Me:nice to see you again although i don't understand all the secrecy

It was Mrs Ndlovu she looked so ravishing i felt underdressed ...she side eyed me

Her:you look good

Okay she is just being nice i mean look at her

Me:thank you

The drive went on in silence , we arrived at this big building , she used her access cards and we went in and we were all alone there well we expect the guards

Me:okay weird

She laughed

Her:don't worry am not some serial killer

Me:why would i assume that

She just chuckled and went inside i followed her I found her sitting on a table the space was just a mess nothing was organised

Me:what am i doing here

Her: i have a business proposition for you

She put business proposition in inverted comma and i looked at her confused

She jumped from the table and the sound of herself echoed in the room

Her:when I saw you at the gym i was impressed okay and i saw that you study bussiness at rosebank college that was a plus for me

Okay why is everyone investigating me ...she continued

Her:my husband and i were legal for sometime but that earned us nothing but disrespect and body trailing us , so were dounge the opposite now and i am working on girl power that is kinda my thing ,I need you I saw what skills you have i just want to harness them further and i could have the best and you become the best

Me:wait you want me to be a criminal

Her:don't put it like that *she rolls her eyes*just i don't know what just don't say criminal , like i said i want you no scratch that I need youso what do you say

Me:i don't know what to say ,I don't have any kind of experience with that

Her:your choice if men says other wise you know

Me:okay whatever

I walked around the space with my arms folded

Me:would i get paid

Her:yes and you will have protection

I chuckled like i would do this without it...I turned to look at her

Me:what is that i have to do

Her:i will tell you everything but first you have to promise not to tell anyone not even your boyfriend Mr Anderson

Me:how do...oh whatever....And why should i not tell him

Her:just don't tell him

Me:okay fine

Her:okay I will get you the contract just to make things official , a car will come and get you tomorrow and i will explain to you , some of my girls will be here

She reached her hand to me and i shook it

Her:it will be a pleasure doing business with you

Me:yeah me too

She laughed

Her:don't worry everything is going to be fine ...come
let me take you home

Me:thank you

We walked out

I don't know what the hell is going in But am doing this
for my dad he needs the money and so do I and i hope
mike doesn't find out I don't want him to think i don't
appreciate his efforts

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 9

MIKE

I couldn't help but follow and once i saw where she
went i went back home , I need here to explain what
she is doing with Ndlovu's wifeI really hope she can
prove me wrong and show me that I can trust her

As i was in my thoughts the elevator opens and it's her ,
she greets me and puts her things down as soon as she
does she sits on my lap and i hold on too her waist

Her:i have to tell you something , I thought i wasn't but
I have too because your doing so much for me

I just felt relief

Me:yes what is it

She told me everything that she knows

Her:am just not sure of what they want me to do do yet but it's something shady and am scared but I also don't want to refuse

Me:do you trust her

Her:o never get the feeling that I shouldn't but why would she say i must not tell you

Me:that's because we're going to doing the same thing ,I sort of get why she wanted you be all quiet about it

Her:so your not mad

Me:no I would've been mad if you didn't tell me because i was going to find out but instead of working for them work for me

Okay that came out of no where I know that myself

Her:Mike

Me:just think about it okay it would be awesome we could be Bonnie and Clyde

She just looked like i threw her the weight of the world and i felt bad for doing that

She couldn't even answer me but she opted for giving me a faint smile

Me:am sorry ,you what forget about it

Her:what if you guys end up being rivals ,I don't want to be your rival ,I would never oppose you

Me:babe please forget about it

Her:Mike shut up and listen, come with me so that when i decline their offer they don't blow my head off

I laughed at how serious she is

Me:wait your not kidding

Her:no am not

Me:i swear uts going to be me and you against the world

With that I pulled her in for a kiss , not was not rushed just slow so I can make her feel how special she is , with that i pulled her to be on top of me , my girl is a freak because soon as i did she started grinding on me and she made sure that my guy was in the right position , I took of her shorts and followed by kissing her neck and her moans my Johnny started getting hard and i wanted her ,I snapped her bra off and that made her moan a bit louder I was sucking on her boobs when i felt her hands inside my pants playing with bra J oh hell no she is good

Her:can i ?

I let her pull of my shirt and pants down and she sat on me again and looked me straight in the eyes

Me:you okay

She nodded

Her:am just admiring you

I quickly eloped her and i was the one on top i kissed her forehead before i went and licked her folds and her clit and she was moaning uncontrolably when she suddently exploded on my face and i was happy with that while she covered her face with that i wiped my face a bit because she literally sprayed on my face , I went inside her , yes she was so warm that I wanted more of her that I went in deeper that caused to dig her nails into my back and her moans into my ears was her asking for more and i did just that

Her:am cumming Mike am cumming

She said between her breaths

Me:cum for me baby come am ready for you

She obeyed because i felt her warm juices cover bra J inside her and i soon followed , we were catching our breaths when she tried to push me

Me:no don't

I flipped and she was now on top of me

Her:take it out

I laughed

Me:you can't even say it and no I love being inside you

She laughed

Her:your weird

We cuddled and yes i was still incident her

The Anderson house hold

There lived the twins , Justin and Mr and Mrs Anderson

Justin never really got along with his dad because he always wants him to be more like Mike *lol* if only he knew what was Mike up

The twins were defiantly trust fund babies they always got what they wanted and they didn't mind that at all they studied and stuff but they never wanted to do anything

Mrs Anderson is a house wife not that she wants too but the husband doesn't want her tk work he likes controlling her

And as for Mr Anderson he is one man that likes control and once he feels like he is losing it he does the unthinkable much to Mike's annoyance who is the only one that seems to have a little bit if control over his dad

but only because he is the that runs the family
comapny

They were having dinner that was prepared by
Lucy(the mom) and having a chat

Mr A:so girls why how was your day ,you don't spend
time with your dad anymore

Layla:oh dad don't be dramatic were not little gukrs
anymore you know

Kayla:besides sad we have lives you know

They all laughed well besides Justin

Lucy:oh my boy your so quiet today whats wrong

Jay:nothing mom just a little bit tired

Mr A:oh really Justin what did you do the whole day

Jay:i was at the ware....

Mr A:shut up justin

The ladies did not know abiut that part if their world

Layla:don't start dad please

There was an awkward silence

Lucy:i should visit Mike he never visits these days

Kayla:well Mikey has a girlfriend now

Layla:she is very hot hotter than Emily i must say

Mr A:wait the girl is not Emily how don't i know about this

Jay:probably because it's none of your business or control

Mr A:Emily is good for Mike and for his public image

Layla:well i don't think your going to like this girl because she is ...

Jay:not the type that Mike goes for not that it's any of your business

He looked at the twins

Jay:keep your mouth shut its not your business to tell

They both realised that he was right and they nodded

MrA:i should pay Mike a visit too it seems like we have catching up to do

Lucy:why do you always have to know every thing
dylan let the kids free oh my god they must be tired

She stood up and left

Jay:see she is enough of your crap quite frankly i am too

Mr A :son you will respect me I am yiur father after all

Jay:yeah yeah am the leader of this house , I am the big Anderson and what i say goesbut that ended a while ago Mike is the big boss now and thank god for that

That hit hard at Mr Anderson and with that Justin took his leave and left

Layla:sad really does every dinner have to end like this , I hate that you have to prove your dominance you know that ends up in a fight all the time

Kayla:sucks alright am over this crap am going to move in with my brother

Dylan was a bit taken a back with what Kayla said

Mr A:what your not going

Them:we are daddy

They left too

Mr Anderson doesn't do well with losing control what will he do to get it back

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 10

Mr Anderson

You see i don't take to kindly too my kids not respecting me but I have given all hope when it comes to that Justin, baby i don't like that am losing my twins i gate that I need to release stress so I go to my usual strip club it total high end and only rich people get in there

I ask for my usual girl candy , she is my girl she helps and i do so too by giving a big tip , after our session i pay her and i go to my sons office i need to talk to him

When I get to the building I walk straight to the office without greeting anyone and he is on a phone call with the biggest smile , soon as he sees me he goes on to end the call

Him:yes i will be early.....what no no you know i can go that long without seeing you.....Okay okay bye babe .

He hangs up

Him:Hi dad what are you doing here

Me:is that the hey I get not I miss you dad?

I go and shake his hand and he dies the same

Him:what no dadanyways what you doing here

Me:i heard you have a new girl

He stops and looks at me

Him:don't start do not start old man you know i do what i want and date whoever i want to date

Me:Mike what have you about Emily and who is this girl

Him:i can handle my bussines so please back off

Me:Mike

Him:don't Mike me , kiss off

He is getting me really angry now

Me:Mike Emily is good for you and bussiness and you know that

Him:well you date her since you like her that much

He stands and bangs the table which makes me flinch a bit

Me:don't getbsmart with me boy

Him:oh fuck off dad ,am not the twins younger to drag along with their noses , unlike them i don't need your money

Were now having a shouting match

Me:Mike am warning you watch your tone

He chuckled and sat down

Him:or what

This bastard knows i can't do anything about it beacuse he now owns 51% of the company he said he doesn't trust me to kick him out when am mad and this mother fucker was right about that but I still make good money ever since he took over

Me:fuck you man

He laughed and he looked at his wrist watch

Him:go i have a geust soon

Me:since when do you kick me out

Him:now.....get the fuck out old man

He is the only that can get away with that

Me:finecontinue making me money

He chuckled and i went out I was met by a bkack young lady that was heading in his office , I just shrugged my thoughts and left

MIKE

That old man is something else , be is the reason I don't visit home that much because we just end

I was about to get back to work when i heard the a knock on the and it was my beautiful lady she looked gorgeus as always today she wore this blood red dress with stilleto and tied her hair into a bun with very minimal make-up , well we had to buy her a power outfit becuase she doesn't want to let Mrs Ndlovu to intimidate her and yes am tagging along just to make sure she is okay like a body guard

Her:penny for your thoughts

She sits in a chair in front of me and puts her sling bag on the table .

Me:just thinking how gorgeus you look today

She blushed a bit

Her:thank you very much

Me:it's a pleasure

Her:ready to go

Me:yes , yes i am ready to go

I closed my laptop and took her hand and we walked out hand in hand and people were staring

Her:you look good

Me:hey I always look good

She rolled her eyes ,that shit annoys me

Me:don't start wuth that shut babe

Her:whatevr Mike

We drive to the location she gave me and when we arrived there were a bunch of expensive cars but I was not shocked the Ndlovu's are rich but I don't give a shit about that am rich too *lol* i got off opened the door for her and helped her when we were using the stairs

Me:you don't look nervous

Her:your here with me so am okay

I smiled at the statement but quickly changed to my serous because we were now at the entrance to walk in , as soon as we stepped in the door a women led to where the group were

We walked in and immediately caught their attention

Mrs Ndlovu approached us she gave fifi a hug while she just shook my hand

Mrs N:well i see you brought a friend to tag along

Fifi:well beacuse there is a little change of plans

Then there he was the big man himself S'celo Ndlovu, he came and joined us

Him:Anderson

Me:Ndlovu

Oh it's just man ego that's all

Mrs N:please don't tell me you changed your mind

Me:do you honestly think it was going to happen especially knowing she has some sort of connection to me

Him:well we thought you wouldn't put your head in your ass and let her be her own women

Fifi:no need for insults please

Me:yeah i see you still think your the best thing ever since Jesus

He chuckled

Him:well can't argue with that

Fifi:okay i didn't come here for this, I will not be joining you guys i have other things to do

Mrs N: oh it's a pity you would've been a great part of the member not to mention ...

Me:yeah well forget all abiut it.....And why are you even doing in joburg

Him:hey man mind your business

Me:i always do ,stay away from

My territory and we will be fine

Him:ya'delela le

Me:fuck you man

I took my ladies hand and we walked away

Him:am glad you changed your choice of women man
that buttless bitch didn't do you any good

We laughed as he yelled that out

Me:bye Asshole

With that we left and i decided we go back to the office
because i had things to finish off , we walked in and we
found Emily sitting on my table with the twins on the
couch

Me:what the hell is this

Fifi let go of my hand and tired to walk out but I pulled
her and held her by the waist

Em:am visiting babe you didn't miss me

I looked at the twins and they just shrugged

Kayla:we found her here bro i swear we didn't call her

I looked back at Emily

Em:oh don't look at me like that what the hell is this

Mike is this why you haven't been calling me because of this

I felt her tighten up a bit like she was holding herself not too beat her assI really wanted her to do it

Fifi:i should go

Me:your not going not going anywhere , Emily get out

Em:not until we talk

Kayla:Emily please not now , please go

Em:fine , but i will be back

She passed and she pushed fifi a bit with her shoulder and she walked out

Fifi:what was that

I went to sit down

Him:i used to sleep with her but i stopped after I met you

Fifi:what

Me:you heard me

Layla:okaaay bro can we move in with you

Fifi and i both turned to look at them

Me:No

Them:what why

Me:because I said so , why do you even want to move in with me

Kayla:there is always a fight at home okay we just want to live without until we can get our own place

They looked at fifi

Her:no no am not getting involved

Me:i still would've said no,I don't want to live with you, your brats

They gasped dramatically and i luaghed

I signaled fifi to come to me she did and i made her sit in my lap

The twins stood up

Kalya:are you too dating

Fifi looked at me

Me:yes she is my wome

She blushed a bit

Fifi:i didn't know we were

The twins looked at us

Me:i thought we confirmed that last night when we had....

Fifi:okay shut your ass up

She buried her face on my neck and she was secretly kissing my neck and she sjjused herself on my crotch

I laughed nervously

Layla:ookay we should leave

Kayla:yeah we should

They giggled they way out

Fifi:i don't like your little bitch , she shows up and does that again am i will kick her flat ass

I laughed so hard at that

Me:really fifi you go for the the white person most sentive issue

Her:well it is flat and i will make it flatter

I laughed so hard .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 11

REFILWE

It was morning time i woke up from Mike's bear cuddle and wore my gym wear i didn't feel like going to gym so I set a gym station on his balcony that was looking out to the city and the air breeze was great for me

I started working out I did my routine but decided to go add 20 more squats , I really like that my butt is perky and Mike loves it too so why not

Because there was no punching bag I decided to do air punched and kicks

Me:1 , 2

Punch punch

Me:1, 2

Kick kick

That's how it went until i was disturbed by a whistle

Him:Damn

Me:your finally awake

I say wiping my sweat with a towel then fro king water

Him:yeah , I didn't know you were an early bird, I

would be joined you

Me:no no , you said were going to the ware house today for my lessons . .don't do that

He did say that but now he wants to back track

Him:you have to go school

Me:i don't want to go back to school not until you do what you promised

Him:uh uh babe don't do that you have to go to school

Of course idiot am gonna go back

Me:Mike school is on Monday

He chuckled

Him:okay fine you win

I punched the air as a sign if victory

Me:do I have to change

I had in a sports bra ,long nikey tights and my Adidas sneakers ,the fit showed my body well my abs also showed

Him:yeah your perfect like that actually because you and i are going to fight

Me:excuse me what

He walked away and i follwed him like a lost puppy

Me:care to elaborate

Him:no backing out now

We made smoothies and went to the warehouse We walked in hand in hand and his workers were looking at us

Him:when we go out for robberies we rob trucks that come from overseas ,and sell them on the low down, but we have a hand in a lot of things hence I have this place and have a lot if people working for meI want you to know the basics of everything i can handle a knife

Me:oh i can do that too

He stoped and looked at me

Me:i came to joburg thinking there are robbers every corner okay

He laughed

Him:okay I will check out those skills , I will personally reach you how to shoot

That brought me some excitement to me

Him:i don't like that your smiling that much why ren't you scared

I just looked at him and just shrugged because i wasn't scared really

We arrived at some open space where it looked like he set a gym station or call it whatevr i don't know

Me:what's this

Him:that's your endurance /stamina exercise

Me:and i need this because

Him:just do it okay

I nodded and some of his guys came to watch , this fucker agreed that they should including thabo I had this buff guy who was the one too take me through everything he looked on with the other

I took off his hoodie and tied to my waist

Him:stop wearing my goodies

Me:no can't do baby

They laughed but thabo didnt as expected lol

Buff G: okay so we will begin with you doing lifts and follow by a plank

Me:oh that's easy

I did 10 lifts and stayed in a plank for 5 minutes after

he had me doing squats with dumbbells that were 5 kg of weight ,it was followed by a lot more exercise and by then I was shit tired

Buff G:good i didn't think you can take that

I had my hands on my knees breathing heavy i just put my thumbs up and signalled him to continue

Mike gave me water and i drank .

Mike:what's next

Buff g:let's see if she can cause some damage to a person Mike would you like to volunteer

He laughed and toom of his shirt and i was distracted

Me:hey hey that's no fair

His boys laughed

Him:Yeah you look like that too you know

I just rolled my eyes much too his annoyance

We did a few defence moves and they showed me how to inflict pain to a person and i was really happy about that but Mike insisted that was enough for today i will continue tomorrow and that's all because i fell on top of him and lets just say he liked the position i landed on

Him:okay boys the show is over you can go

Thabo:hao boss that was all

He looked mad , I know him his side veins wanted to pop

Him:thabo did I stutter get your ass out if here am busy

I couldn't help but laugh at that

Me:busy with what

She lowered me into a kiss and was holding in to my ass we didn't evn care if they had left or not

Him:thatyou did good today but I don't like this

Me:i know but you said its for my own protection right

Him:rightyou know we should start going in dates i want too show you off now

Me:now you want to take me out after you were deep inside me

He laughed

Him:okay wow

We kissed again

THABO

I couldn't believe my eyes when i see her , she looked hot i always saw she was fit but dammit she is sexy ,

but i can't rush my plan it has to go swiftly and that means no rushing

I have been stealing money bit by bit from Mike and i don't think he has noticed yet ,so far i have take a million and am using that to pay my gang memeber am using that money too pull them in , but with Mike's crew they all refused to work with those butches are scared of him but am not I will show him and coming too fifi she will be mine again wether she likes it or not I made her who the fuck does she think she is bloody hell .

After they kicked us out I stayed and peeked a little bit and just listened to their conversation , so vele she had sex with him , he he okay fineI had to leave beacuse they were making out a bit too much and j was boiling with anger ...how dare he touch my goods oh he is gonna get it he better watch out.

MIKE

me:you have been saying yes for the last ten minutes

She came out looking spectacular

Her:okay am done

Ahe out her things in her sling back and we left

Her:so where are you taking me

Me:you will see

I feel like i need to do something for her we have been

so busy that I haven't been doing what i planned in my head when we first met

We arrived at this restaurant that I booked we walked in and was met by the manager , and the waiter they took our coats and was led to our table

Her:did you book the who...

I kissed cheek

Me:yesyou deserve it

She blushedI pulled a chair for her and she sat and i did too

We were talking and laughing with our starters and wine at hand

Her:i really thought of you as a book nerd

Me:i am actually a book nerd i just need bigger space then all my book collection will come out

Her:i like thatyou love reading its so great and am glad your always not serious i really don't like that side of you yes its sexy but your little rude when you are

Me:i don't mean to be rude but...

Her:no I get it just please don't charge at me

It broke me that she even had to ask

Me:am sorry okay and i will never ever hurtnyih intentionally

She nodded and i held her hand

Me:i want you know , ever since the book shop i have wanted you I don't care what anyone says or thinks about us

She looked down

Her:it's hard you know sometimes uts hard to miss the stares

Me:who give a fuck

She laughed and looked at me

Her:am very fragile Mike please take care of me , if anyone is ever doing to break me its you and am not telling you this because am weak but because am choosing too trust you with me

Me:i will never hurt you

She came and sat on my lap and we kissed....how did I get so lucky

INSERT 12

A week later

THABO

Today is takeover day , I am very happy that everything is going accordingly i have managed to recruit 2 members from Mike's crew they said they are tired if working him and i was surprised because they are shit scared him but ey they are very good part of my team today we have a meeting and it feel good being a boss

I walk in and soon as i raise my hand they stop talking

Me:sure boys

Them:sure/heita/ya boss

Me:so were new yes i know but that doesn't mean we cabt proceed with business

I point at the two that just joined us and they raise their heads to look at me their names are thabang and Sean

Sean:yeah boss

Me:today we are officially going to quit at Mike's

Thabang:are you sure boss i mean Mike's might just.....

Me:are you questioning me

They shook their heads

Me:okay, today we have a mission , there is a new jewlary store that is opening and they have a very treasured and it's worth 10million we hit that we have a good starting Capital....you may leave and you two follow me

We went in what is going to be my office

Thabang:boss how are we going to do this how do we not let Him trap us

Sean:you knowhow smart he is

And I know all of that but we are going to be smart about it.....I luaghed

Me:you see biys you still underestimate, you think i can't out smart him but I can and i am going to show you

Sean:how though

Me:we make the biggest statement and in my books the biggest disrespect of them all

Thabang :bossman your speaking in riddles i just lay out the plan

Me:we go quit at his house

Them:what the fuck

Me:yes , that way he says were not afraid of him anymore , yeah us going it says fuck you and we don't

need you

They looked a bit uneasy

Me:don't worry boys he is going to be all alone you know the boss has no life

They nodded in agreement

Me:let's go boys

They stood up and we left for the bosses house

MIKE

Me:i swear you look sexier everyday

Her:what do you know , you finally admit am the sexiest thing you have boned

I laughed

Me:Babe ever since you kicked that guys butt you have been on a daze ey

Yeah we were at a club at this guy touched her butt as i was about to make him feel my wrath baby over here punched him TKO and ever since she has a new found confidence and i love it

Her:you do *she said in a sexy voice*

Me:Babe don't start

She took off my shirt she was wearing and was left naked

Me:no shit babe

I came and picked her and was holding her by her ass and i went and put her on the kitchen counter and she wrapped her legs an my waist

Her:you have turned me into a sex maniac

Me:what are you talking about

I say as i was kissing her neck

Her:see what am talking about

She then went on to kissing me she took off my shirt and i was keftbwith my boxer

I was about to carry her to the bed when the elevator opens and thabo and two of my boys walked in ,I quickly gave fifi the shirt and she wore it and we made our way to the lounge

You see my apartment design is a open space so yeah they saw everything ,and thabo looked pissed like he didn't expect to see us together

Me:and what are you doing here

He quickly stopped looking at fifi and looked at me straight in the eye

Thabo:were here to talk and can we do that in private
not wuth women here

I chuckled and i sat down and she sat on my lap

Thabo:well that's bullshit but I will say whatever

Me:fuck off thabo and say what you say and leave

Thabo:well me and my biys were out we quit and you
can go to hell

I don't what happend but fifi and i luaghd at the same
time

Fifi:okay wow

She stood up

Fifi:am going to take a shower join me when your done
wib these shit heads

She left the room

Me:you think i don't kniw that thabo huh, you have
been stealing my money, you have been trying to
recruit my boys , oh you stupid boys see when i finally
decide to come for you , you better be ready because
my boy am going to crush you....now fuck off i have a
lady waiting for

I left for the shower and i joined my baby and we had
amazing shower sex , we were in the bed cuddling

Her:did the thabo situation come as a shock to you

Me:no , I know everything the happens in my warehouse and waiting for him to grow his gang that is going to be a perfect time to take over

Her:can i handle the one you takeover

Me:what

Her:Babe you have been training me Okay and you have been let me help wuth the books and i want too help you said Bonnie and Clyde right

Me:i know but....

Her:you don't trust me

.e:oh no babe it's not that it's just that will you be able to handle it I mean it's dangerous

Her:baby i won't be doing it completely alone your here

Me:are you sure you want to join in

Her:yes , yes i do

Me:okay babe as ling as your surebut what about school

She sighed

Her:i really really don't like school but i will study and go for tests

Me:as ling as your sure baby

Her:i am

We talked and we were playing with each others hands until we fell asleep

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 13

REFILWE

Me:tell me what are you planning you have that thing in your face that I can't really tell what it is

He completely changed the topic

Him:when are you going to school

Honestly i have been taking online courses with the school am now part-time not full time i really like school I don't why but I haven't really told him that

Him:i asked a question and you know i don't like repeating myself babe

Me:i have been taking online classes Mike i don't want to be a full time student , school is not for me

Him:you could've just told me that you know i never judge you

And I have to tell hime something

Me:baby

He sat up and looked at with narrowed eyes

Him:you never call me that never ever whats going onwhat do you want ?

I laughed and pulled him back to a cuddle its crazy how comfortable i am with him and i know that I like him am not at love yet maybe i should be but am scared to open just to get hurt again

Me:am going home today i miss my dad and i don't know when am coming back

The last part was a lie

Him:you don't know when your coming back oh babe come on am going to miss you

I laughed at him

Me:am joking geez i will be back the following dayam just going to check on my mom nothing else

Him:okay then and don't joke like that I almost had a heart attack

I laughed

Me:don't worry about

We were still cuddling in bed and making out when we
hesrd the elevator open

Me:you really need to fix that we can't have people
going as they please

Him:i know ...I know

He kissed my forehead and nose before making way
out of the room and i used this as an opportunity to call
my dad

He answered on the 3rd ring

Phone call

Me:hi dad are you good

Him:ohhh tsontso my dear i almost thought you forgot
about me or that you were mad that i can't pay for your
fees

Me:i would never be mad at you not when yoh are my
only parent

Him:hai man ngwanaka don't say that you will hurt
your mothers feelings

Me:she doesn't care papa when was the last time she
even spoke or asked about me papa you know she

doesn't care about me only her precious daughter

Him:but she is your mother too

Me:well she doesn't acknowledge me at all and i have grown to accept that I will never be good enough for her

Him:Ao tsontso i don't like it when you speak like that

Me:anyway dad i wanted to tell you that am visiting today but I will probably arrive late neh

Him:oh my baby girl you just made me so happy daddy misses you phela

Me:i missed you too daddy okay let me get ready

Mike jumped on the bed and i fell down because of his soft matters and he laughed

Me:asshole

He busted out laughingshit my dad.....

Me:daddy you still there

Him:tsontso who was that are you living with a man

Me:me a man no no no dad just my new roommate is gay papa so he is but extra

Mike gave me a death stare

Him:okay baby

Me:okay daddy bye

Him:bye

I hung and i was still in the floor Mike pulled me up and i was on top of him

Him:am taking you home

Me:i can catch a taxi

Him:okay hell no

Me:fine Mr Anderson

I walked to the bathroom seductively and he followed and we had a shower together, Mike and i have a lot of sex .

MR Anderson

Me:Lucy you know you are nothing without me Okay without me you here NOTHING oksy nothing so stop being a spoilt brat and move away

Lucy:i have had enough of your sluts dylan i am enough of you one day am going to leave you and you won't believe it

I laugh mocking her

Me:Bullshit am your meal ticket women

Her:oh fuck off

I pulled her by the hair and pushed her to the wall

Me:if you ever i mean ever speak to me like that I will break you women

I let her go of her hair and walked out the room i was met by a punch on the face i looked up and it was Mike

Me:what the fuck Mike

Him:you out your hands on my mom again old man i will break your bones , I will mess you up so bad you will forget who you are

I stood up and faced him

Me:what are you even doing here

Him:i was just passing by to check on my mother

I chuckled

Me:oh fuck you Mike

He punched me on the gut

Him:say the one more time

He left , this boy is annoying me , I heard one of his boy is opposing him its tombi work to bring him down a notch then when he is down i will swoop in to help him

and i will be super hero daddy and i will have some sort of control over himam such a genius .

MIKE

Fifi was waiting for me in the car , I wanted to see my mom real quick but when i heard my dad being a dick head i had to help out cant believe he has the balls to be like that to my mom god I hate him sometimes

After that episode i said hi to my siblings when i got to the car she was not there i called her phone it was on voice mail i started panicking

Who the hell took her I was about to get in my car when i heard her laughing so hard that she had tears in her eyes and some were streaming down her face , I was mad but the laughter was trying to suppress failed me because i laughed too

Her:that's for making me ride a sports car when i didn't want too

Me:that's brutal fifi i almost died

Her:am pretty sure you shit your pants

She laughed again and we got in the car

Me:the sports car is for you benefit babe were making this 3hour drive 1h30

Her:jyst make sure your focused okay

Me:okay baby

We drove off

Her:too bad you had to choose a sports car i was going to give you a quicky but there is no space here

I instantly regreted my choice,and bra Jay there didn't understand because at a mention of a quicky he was waking up

Fifi noticed my bulge and she laughed

Her:okay relax horn dog

Okay I can't help it am still getting used to chocolate

Him: am not leaving i will sleep at some bnb

Me:okay now am going to feel guilty just go back home i will a taxi when i come back later tomorrow

Him:no can't do am going to miss you too much being in another province to you proves to be hard to digest

Me:don't be dramatic baby you will be fine

He didn't looking like he was taking any of it becuase right after I said that he folded his arm

Me:okay fine then but then I will spend the rest of the weekend here since my own personal driver is here and i dont have to worry about a taxi .

He pulled me and kissed me mind you were outside my parents house

Me:let me go before dad decides to come out and look who it ishow am i going to explain that am with a white boy

I said in a mocking voice i don't know what but being with him made me some what confident and all

Him:okay okay promise to make time for me during this weekend

Me:i wouldn't dare bit spend time with you okay

I looked at him and i just felt butterflies oh god am falling for him aren't I

Him:okay go now ...call you when i am settled in

Me:what you going to wear since you didn't pack anything

Him:oh that's easy shopping tomorrow and your coming with

Me:okay text me the time

Him:what no protesting oh the lords of maftown work fast huh

Me:yeah yeah whatever bye baby

He smiled

Him:i cant get over it you even woke up bra Jay

I laughed

Me:well bra Jay is going have to wait for a while

He sighed

Him: i know

I pecked his lips

Me:talk later

He nodded and i kissed him again , I opened the car door and closed it he opened the window and i peeked my head inside

Me:don't look at my ass when i walk in

He chuckled

Him:i promise

I walked and i opens the gate when i was about to turn i blew a kiss to him and he caught ...I smiled to myslef motho kgale aitima waitsi.....he drove off and i was a bit bumped ...bloody hell i am catching feelings

I looked at my wrist watch and it was 20:00 it was pretty late i knocked twice when i heard footsteps and i knew that was not my dad i faked my smile and waited

the door opened and it was my sister who looked very happy to see me ðŸ˜¸,ðŸ˜¸,ðŸ˜¸, geez am joking she just looked okay I geuss

Me:hi say i kissed you so much

I said sarcastically and she faked her own smile

Her:I wish I could say the same sis

I just rolled my eyes and i walked in the house to the lounge as soon as i saw my dad i d4opped my bags and went to hug him

Me:hi papa i missed you so much

He hled on a bit tighter

Him:ohhh ngwana papa I missed you took ...look at you you have gained weight everything must be going well

I know he meant school wise i just nodded i didn't even notice my mom was sitting next to him , he broke the hug and held my hand and gave me a look i knew what he meant by that and i turned to look at my mom

Me:hi mama

She stood my

Her:my baby good too see you after so much time

My sister sat down and liked at me

Mama:oh ngwanaka you have changed so much even your style

True Mike has taken me shopping and i got a bit of a upgrade and they did look expensive

Mama:how do you manage now that papa chat send you money

Me:i found job mama and am making ends meet

I said while settling down on a couch

Papa:i am proud of you tsontso I was so worried when i lost my job

Me:don't worry papa I don't want you too stress

Mama:arent you hungry i made dinner

Why is my mom being nice

Me:no ma am okay

My phone and it was Mike I had to smile the smile i had

Me:let me get this

i stood up and went to my room

Phone call

Him:Babe

Me:miss me already

He sighed exagegaratively

Him:you have no idea , I didn't notice how attached i am too you

I giggled

Me:oh come on baby am sure you can mange i mean you will see me in a few hours

Him:yeaham goingnto the bar

Me:uh i think not its late sleep

Him:yes sir

I laughed

Me:Babe call tomorrow okay am still with the parents

Him:okay give them my love

Me:hahaha very funny Mr

He laughed

Him:okay bye babe later

He hanged up and I webt back to the lounge and the family was lauging at something i went to the kitchen to get myself water and i thought to myself I really miss him so it's official am falling in love with Mike

Anderson what a strange feeling

THABO

Me:uhhh Anderson senior what do I owe the pleasure sir

Him:you have balls son and at this moment i have a mission for you

Me:am listening

Him:Mikey is getting a big head He thinks he is the boss and i think someone needs to drop him a few notch

That got me really interested if I work with his father that means i can have a better chance going against him

Me:okay boss man tell me what you need

Him:good still see that you have a head of bussines

We sat down and had a shit of vodka

Him:there is a shipment coming in this Monday and i want you and your boys too hijack that shipment, what's being delivered are weapons that he is going to sell to the Germans he is going to make over a billion with that well that's after converting it

Me:and how do we spilt

Him:60/40

Me:bullshit am going to be doing all the work and i have men to pay so 50/50

He looked at me

Him: okay fine only because i want this done

He stood up and he headed for the door

Him:don't disappoint me young men

Me:i will not

He left.....this is going to make me a lot of money and it will solidify my spit as a gang leader if I pull this off I will be a real G

I have to stray planni g now and i have to organise weapons and Amor i can't let this slip for me

MIKE

So my dad goes behind my back am actually going to let them get away with this and let them clean the money once that's done i will go take it let them do the hard job

I warne this boy not too mess with me that's not how you get in the game ,am worth billions M respected everywhereif i let this fool make a mockery of me everyone is gonna think am fare game

As for my dad am gonna make him wish he was dead
am tired of his bullshitbut firts am going to
introduce my women to my dad in classic fashion i
can't wait I just got excited jeez....

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 15

MIKE

It was so quiet my baby was not her usual self and i
need my sexy queen back escpecially today we need to
pull this off am officially making her my queen so I
need that fire backI look at the mirror and her sister
is all smiles looking at her phonejesus it's so tense

Me:Babe

She cleared her throat

Her:am sorry i was just think

Bee:so fifi o jola le lekgowa wena, wait till daddy hear
this

Her:not today bontle okay am tired of your nonsesne
so if if you don't want to sleep in the street shut your
ass up

Okay maybe I didn't have to do anything

Me:because your sister is here we should take her home first I don't know how long that meeting is going to take

Her:oh yeah but we should get her , her own flat I don't like her

Wow she is brutal

Bee:i can't live alone , I have never lived alone before

Her:i don't give a fuck bontle

She went quite

Me:i haven't seen what your number babe

She looked at the back and just shrugged her shoulder she took off her seat belt and took off her coat and damn i stoped the car thank god the road was empty

Me:when did you buy that

Her:you like ...I just need too put on my shoes then I will be ready

Me:yeah your hot baby indont lie

She chuckled And put on her coat agian

Bee:are you selling your body nana, I know you might think i don't care but I doand is that how you afford that grocery

Her:don't worry about me like would kill me if someone would touch his body

I felt like a proud dad when she said that

Me:damn straight baby

We high fived

We drove and talked , but we couldn't be free at all because her sister ,they fell asleep , after sometime we arrived and i woke them up ,we went up the elevator and in the apartment

Bee:holy shit

She dropped her bags and that annoyed me ,I took the bags and placed them on a corner , we freshener up a bit and she wore her 20inch LV shoes that I bought,the first ever gift i gave her

She had on a mini leather dress that had red sewing as detail , she put on gladiator LV's

Her:do i need my bag babe

She yelled from her our room

Me:No

Her sister was sitting on the couch

Me:if you need something to eat there's the fridge

i pointed at the room she will use

Me:you will sleep there and please keep my space clean

Bee:i will do so and thank you

Me:i would do anything to your sister

She rolled her eyes

Me:i saw that and please don't try anything , am not always this nice

She looked rather taken a back , my queen walked in as she was wearing her coat again

Me:you wanna hit them with a surprise

She laughed and covered herself

Me:don't exhaust yourself you have class later today

She signed so dramatically i laughed

Her:don't remind me

Me:i don't get why you hate school

Bee:you know am here

Her:we know that

Burn

Me:okay baby lets go

I took her hand and we walked out oh baby it's show time baby it's show time.

BONTLE

okay ,I Washington coming here to my man that I found on Twitter but gee he is old and rich but I have now a new plan that requires me to backstab my sister , yhuu no that white boyfriend of her is flames and i know am hotter than her at least i think so , but the dammest thing my sister is now showing me flame but I know my precious sister is not a beast in bed like i am that is how am getting Mike, she is living my life and am gonna take it from her

I mean i managed to make our mother hate her and now She hates my mom for cheating on dad i can't wait to feel Mike inside me now my clit just got excited

REFILWE

We got to the building Ao shame mara thabo is trying mara lol we walked in me and my man and as we were about to go a man walked to us

Him:Sean are they inside

Sean:yes boss they are now seated and celebrating they are planning on hitting on your shipments again and....

Him:Sean speak man

Sean:thabo is planning on taking your Mrs

What the hell thabo you'd swear we never been together though

Me:i can't believe him

Mike:is my dad on it

Sean:no , it's his own personal mission

Him:that bastard....good job Sean you can go now

Me:your always on top of things baby

Him:yes if you cheat i will beat your ass

Me:and if you cheat i will cut your balls off

We laughed and walked in the building sesb showedbus the room and we eveasdropped a bit

Mr A:my son is definalty going to take a knock you did good young man

Thabo:it's a pleasure sir ,I hope we do it again soon

With that Mike opened the door and the shock on his dad face almost made me laugh but it was a serious matter i had keep it cool

Thabo:Anderson what do you want here

Mike chuckled all this time He had his hand on my

waist

Him:you have balls now thabodid yiunhear that
babe Anderson

He was mocking his voice on the last part

Mr A:s...son what arenyou doing here

Him:oh unheared you guys collected my shipment am
here to collect my moneyboys

He called , 2 guys I don't know came and took the
money and they left badass i was so horny he just
turned me on right there yoooh ha.a

Me:thabo you never learn do you , didn't they say
backoff but no you had to be a dick head and not listen

MrA:and who is this whore

What the fuck

Him:oh daddy dearest this right here is your future
daughter in law

His dad stood up and Mike leg go if my waist he fixed
his jacket too distract his dad and then punched his gut
and didn't let go as he whispered something in his eyes
and he practically ran out of the room i couldn't hold it
in any more i laughed so hard as i was taking my coat
off and the thabo was drooling that made me happy

I went to him as i took his drink and sipped on it I

quickly spit it out

Me:really hennesy tee i thought you would upgrade

Thabo:don't th

I slapped him and i swear he wiggled a bit

Me:you always looked down on me wena neh i was so nice to you tee , I gave it my all and you threw it my face all the time.....I was never good enough for you well look at you know baby

Mike:don't call him that

I held my laughter my baby is so jealous

Thabo:i swear refilwe

Okay that's it

I took and shoved him too the wall and kicked him over and over with my knee on his balls and his screams brought me happiness after that I dropped him to the floor and i stopped on his dick with my heel and i kept on turning my heel like am crushing a roache

Thabo:please stop

I then remembered all the time He would hit me and call me names the time He would force himself on i just lost it gee,I kicked him over and over again i took of my shoes and continued my beat down my dress my restricting so I toom it off too that's when i brought him

to his knees and i used my knee to kick him and my knee met his nose and he hit a wall

He screamed in agony i was about to go for him again when i felt hands on my waist pulling me away , i tried to fight him but nothing , I pretended to cool down he let go and i pulled his gun quick and aimed for Thabo dick and i shot him 3 times

Thabo:aaaahhhh

Me:even in pain you still think am weak

I shit his knees caps 4 times each

Me:have fun being paralysed mother fucker

I took my coat and out over my shoulder and walked out mind you am in my under wear I got in the car and cried my eyes out

Mike came and just drove off ,when we got to the apartment I went straight for the shower and stayed in there for quite sometime am not even going to school I can't really focus now

I found him on the bed ,he patted a space next to him and i went to cuddle him naked , we fell asleep Like that

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 16

REFILWE

2weeks later

I went back to school i don't want to be a nothing in life and that made my baby so happy,my sister has been living with and that bitch thinks I can't see what she is doing ,and my man is not gullible too, oh and i want her to push me further I swear I will am going to rearrange her face

School was school ,I was on my way back when i saw Kayla, I can tell them apart because one has a mole just near their nose but nince you get to know them they don't really get along

Her:oh hey babe

She came and gave me a hug

Me:how are you

Her:am good sweetie,so is my brother that good

Me:what 're you talking about

Her:i mean damn girl I don't thinkntou have friends because your always with your man

I laughed

Me:well when the fuck is good

Her:TMI babe TMI

We laughed

Her:need a ride

Me:please babe

We got in her car and drove off ,am way closer to the twins than the brother I don't know i just get weird vibes from him

Her:i can't belive my brother is not a fuck bit anymore I mean he looks like he wants to settle down

Me:it's probably because i promised to chop his dick off if he cheats

She laughed so hard she even hit her head with the steering wheel

Me:i don't play games hunny not it comes to my man

Her:man i wish I had your confidence am just not in love with my man anymore

Me:and why not leave him

She looked down and that gave me all the answers i need

Me:oh sweetie don't worry we will deal with him

Her:you don't how he gets babe

Me:and he doesn't know how i get

She just looked at me and shrugged

Me:do you know where he hangs out

Her:i know he is going to taboo tonight

Me:where going to taboo ...come too the apartment
looking as hot as you can put one short dress Kayla tell
layla to join us

Her:what are we going to do

Me:were going show your boyfriend that you don't
need him

Her:okay

She said excitedly

She dropped me off and i went upI found bontle and
Mike watching T.V lol ke no shebile o with her short
shorts

I walked passed them to look for clothes for tonight

Him:Babe

Mike called out , i went to the lounge and looked at him

Me:your going to make me late

Him:that's no way to greet your man

Bontle rolled her eyes

Me:am sorry baby I just need to help Stella with something at taboo

He narrowed his and put on his sulk faceno no I can never say no to that face

Me:Babe no....no.....no i can't with that face I cant disappoint Kayla babe

Him:let me go with then

Me:Babe

Bee:i don't mind keeping you company Mike

Me:see you have someone to keep you company

Him:i will just go to the office and work

Good boy

I went and took a shower , after that I decided on wearing my red short dress it is backless i wore my knee high black boots i paired it with a long blazer with my chanel sling back , I went out and my sister looked mad for some reason , she needs to get the hell out

Mike came out in his sweat pants and vest modimo
my man is hot hle bathong

He looked at me with those sexy eyes i felt myself
getting horny but I know if I ask for a quicky he is
going to fuck me all night i can't risk it

Me:baby can you orgainse me VIP seats

Him:donedid you have to wear that dress

Me:we can go now

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Kayla , layla and are were dancing a d I must say were
having fun , they looked so hot I list6 it ,her man has
been giving her stares all night and that made her very
happy , I told her to pay him no mind actually show
him that it's not lime she cabt get another man and my
plan is working

I lile the twins and i wouldn't want anyone hurting
them .

Layla:well we spoiled his far his eyes are glued on you

Kayla:can i go to him now

Us:no

Me:he gonna be so nice too you sweetie after this you won't remeber that he has been an ass ...text me tomorrow when he sends you a ling text apologising

We high fived , I taught them how twerk and move to the beat phela they were clueless

MIKE

Its 2am and fifi is still not back , I came home 2 hours ago hoping to find her instead i was met by her naked sister that disturbed me a bit , yes she is hot but nothing compared to her sister am used to ass now , and she had none .

After that episode i locked our room am not taking any chances ,I heard a knock

Her:baby open

Oh it's fifi I went to open her

Her:why did you lock you never lock

She is drunk and she looked so while taking her clothes off

Let me help

Her:baby

Me:uhhh

Her:i love you

Okay she is definalty drunk

Me:what

Her:you make me so happy and i was gonna break up with you but you keep on being so nice to me that am scared that one day you were are not going to want me so I try to block you hai badimo bagana

I don't what she said the last part but heard the important part right?

Her:i mean your worth billions one day your going to wake up and realise that am worth nothing and your gonna leave , am not ready for that day because it's going to shutter me

Its shuttering me that she thinks so little of herself after undressing her I carried her to the bed

Her:i love you so much Mike Anderson i don't know why

Those were her last words before she dosed off

I kissed her forehead and pulled her for a cuddle

Me:i love you too baby

I need her to open up to me,I didn't think she felt that

way , she is too good at covering her emotions and hurt

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 17

My head is banging all I remeber were the shots and champagne that kept coming to our table i had fun i don't lie

Mike is not next to me he must have gone to work,what no it's Saturday today , I stretched my hands ,took a shower and wore his hoodie

I smell bacon ahhh yes , I went to the kitchen and i found him drinking juice and my sister is having breakfast made by who

Him:hi baby

He pulled me and kissed me and i kissed back

Me:how did I get home

Him:the twins brought you or should i say their driver , they called to say thanks for a great night

Bee:didn't know you were a party animal

Me:you know nothing about me

Him:okay baby so we need to talk

Me:can i ear and go back sleep and then talk

Bee:do you ways talk back ,uts not hot

Him:tell her

FUCK them

Me:okay fine Mike can I eat first

I know what he wants to talk about , I remembered that I told him that I love him and i do but i can't say it not now it's so early

He dished up for me and i ate him and bontle went to watch T.VI don't like their little budding friendship or whatever you call it , I ate washed the dishes

Me:done

He came and piggy backed me to our room...okay wow loom at me with 'Our

We sat on the bed side by side and i put my leg on his lap and my head on his shoulders

Him:you told me you loved me yesterday ,I was so happy but then you poured your emotions out , why huh why don't you tell your feeling do you have to break down by your self when you have a partner that is willing to listen , baby i am not thabo and yes am rough around the edges but I would never hurt you ,

my net worth does not define me , all the money I could lose in a minute , but you know what will never change

I shook my head

Him:my love for you

Me:it's hard not to feel like that , your ready doing so much for me , but it's not just that ,sometimes you get so angry am scared you will hurt me like he did ,I am tough i know but to the ones i love am weak , and right now at this moment your the one most capable to hurt me because i gave you my heart, it was even my intention too but you made so hard not too love you, am really scared

Him:you think am not

I looked at him

Him:look at you ,your every thing a man would want , and i swear am gonna kill any man that wants you

We laughed

Him:please never shut me out

I sat on him and lowered my head to him , we were breathing the same air with our lips inches apart ,he held on too my ass an involuntary moan came out

Him:I really do love you

I kissed him and he kissed back

Me:I love you too

We could've easily had sex but we ended up cuddling and talking up a storm .

Okay now am gonna beat up a bitch that goes for my man no joke

BONTLE

i can't believe he loves her lol we will see about that , he is my way to the food life , and from what i have been reading about in the tabloids he is filthy rich

After listening to their conversation i decided to you out explore a bit , I have some money saved , I walked around and saw a coffee shop I went in for a cappuccino and a brownie

I was eating away when a this guy walked in and Jesus he is hot , my sister might be rubbing off her white man syndrome on me , but he is nothing like Mike

I was munching on my brownie when he sat on my table

Him:a pretty lady should not be sitting alone

Me:well am not alone now aren't I

He laughed

Him:Justin

Me:Bontle

Him:a pleasure bontle

Me:so how can I help you justin

Him:if you would come home with me

I was horny AF listening to Mike and my sister fuck is not easy and masturbating is not easy

Me:okay

He looked shocked

Him:are you serious

Me:let's go you wouldn't want to keep a short lady waiting would you

Him:A.a.a.h okay lets go

He paid my bill and we left ,we got in his car and we went to a hotel and boy did we fuck all around the hotel ,am i a slut? Nah i have needs for God's sake

MIKE

My baby was still sleeping when i got up,so I decided not too wake her up , am blessed to have her really and it's now my lifes mission to make her happy

I looked at my phone and i had whatsapp messages,I

opened and Emily sent me nude pictures what the hell is wrong with her

I couldn't help but laugh why the hell would she do this , it's embarrassing, I deleted the pic,I huts don't want to upset Fifi with this

I sat on the couch while eating lays watching The expendables when bontle walked in , soon as she saw she turned her heels and sat next to Me

Her:where is my sister

She touched my thigh , I removed her hand

Me:don't do that it's annoying

Her:please don't deny it , we don't have to tell her baby , you know you want me

She came and sat on me , this girl ,I pushed her off and but she came back on top and quickly stole a kiss I stood up and she fell on her butt

Me:fuck off bontle

Voice:hao mamele ne bontle

Bee:oh my god sis askies

Her:bontle hao mamele akere wena , didn't i warn you huh

Bontle stood up and was met with a slap that put her

back to the floor

She drag her by her hair to the elevator , when it opened she pushed her inside

Her:don't come back here , text me your address and i will bring your clothes nxa

The elevator closed and she took the lays chips and sat down

Me:uhhhh

Her:ohhh i love this movies sit down baby

I better not cheat or am dead lol

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 18

JUSTIN

i just had the greatest fuck session of my life but girl is a whoreI mean who sleeps with a guy they just met , I gave her my number in case she wants too hook up again

Phone rings unknown number

Phone call

Sniffs

Her:hey remember me

Is that her why is she crying oh man I hope she is not a psycho

Me:yeah hey babe

Her:i need a place to crash , my bitch sister just threw me out

Me:okay as long as i get pussy

I joke

Her:i will send you the location ,weird that's Mike's building , I drive there quickly and when i there she is on the corner crying i ran to her and hug her and she hugs back

Me:are you okay and what are you doing at my brothers building

She looks at me

Her:i was living with my sister and boyfriend for a while is your brother Mike

I nodded and she chuckled

Her:small world

Me:okay what happend

Her:she got insecure and thought I slept witj Mike,she threw me out can you imagine that

Me:yeah i also get weird vibes from yiur sister come lets go

We drove away and she gave me a head in the car ,I think i love that she is so sultry , we arrived at my flat ,this is where I come when am tired of my parents

Her:nice place

Me:where is tour luggage

Her:she said she will drop it once i call

Me:call her you need to change

Hey don't look at me like that am not rich rich like my brother and the only job i have its at the warehouse its the only income i have and it's for me my lifestyle is expensive

Her:i will do that after this

She came and kissed and unzipped my pants and was playing with my dick

Me:are you a sex addict

She laughed

Her:no , this thank you for a place to stay

We fucked all over the place ,man this is not bad at all .

MIKE

I love her we were sitting and watching another movie when the elevator door open and it was my mom and dad WTF and fifi and i just had couch sex she only had my shirt on

Mom:oh honey she is so cute

She sat next to a vey uncomfortable Fifi

Me:Mom , Dad what are you doing here

Mom:your dad said you have a sluty whore but look your watching movies with popcorn you never do that sweetie

She hugged

Fifi:it's nice too meet you Mrs Anderson ...even though this is super weird

I was looking at my dad am going to kick his ass okay maybe not that but still this not how i wanted my mom to meet the love of my life

Dad:Mike son this not what i wanted for you, you know your stepping out off tradition with this

She pointed at my baby who looked really pissed i wish

I could tell her to drop kick his ass

Me:what this dad huh, you mean my women , the mother of my future kids , what is it

Dad:she is black Mike

I was shocked beyond words

Mom:Dylan that was uncalled for what the hell is that

I looked at her , her face was buried on her knees

Me:so what she is black, your not the one fucking her and your not the one in love with her so stop being a BITCH

Dad:what did you say

Mom:please stop it you two

She says shushing Fifi

Me:get the fuck out dad a d if you ever i mean ever disrespect my girl like that I swear I will not be responsible for my action

Dad:so you will choose her over me , your father , I raised you son of bitch

I punched him so hard he fell down causing my mom too scream at me

Me:you didn't raise me , mom did, why do think i was

so scared of commitment because i saw you FUCKING WOMEN AND I MEAN DIFFERENT WOMEN YOU ruined me and Justin and my first chance at happiness in a long time and you want too ruin it FUCK IT and FUCK YOU and get the fuck

Fifi:don't, please don't

Mom:don't get i their fights come lets go

She helped her out the lounge and my dad stood up

Me:GET OUT

Dad:After she sucks you dry don't come back running to me ASSHOLE

He left and i screamed out if frustration am going to kill this old man

I went to our room and my baby was sobbing , as tough as she is my baby is fragile that I know about her ,and thank god my mom is here

Me:is she okay

She shook her head

Mom:I need to go

Me:your not going any where mom he needs to cool off first and until he does your staying with i know he lies beating you up

Mom:but baby

Me:but nothing,I still have some of your things you can use the guest room

Mom:okay

She went to the room

Me:baby

Her:you shouldn't have to fight with yiur family because of me

I chuckled she is so sweet

Me:we have been fighting long before that my love don't worry about him

Her:am so sorry baby I never wanted that ,how is your sweet mom married to such an ass

Yep there's my baby

Me:yeah love works wonders

Me:don't ever be like him

Me:i would never i love you way too much for that ,I meant what i said some day am going to marry you

She laughed and she sat on me and suggled up

Me:i can't believe you get so tiny when you snuggle on

me

Her:I love feeling your dick print

I laughed

Me:your such a horny monster

Her:it's your fault baby , buuuut no sex till your mom goes

Me:MOOOOOM you have to go

I yelled and she laughed

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 19

JUSTIN

Well bontle has been living with me for a week now , her sister brought her stuff the day she got her to say she was shocked she was with me is an understatement, she was with Mike who looked highly disappointed in me but hey am making lemonade out of lemons

We just had a fire session and am shit tired, this girl is waerj g me down

Her:am so tired my Vagina is burning up

I laugh as i pull her closer to me

Me:means man is good right

Her:yeah yeah, I need a job and fast am not living of my sister any more

Me:do you have a degree ,any qualifications i could help you look

Her:don't worry about it , am a big girl I can take care of myself

Me:okay then lady

Her:yes

She got up from bed

Me:where you going

Her:job hunting

Me:uhhh your killing me hear baby I thought one more round

Her:forget it M.....I mean Justin

Me:who did yoh almost call me

Her:just bad habits you know those are hard to kill

We just laughed it off , she took a shower after she wore her short jumpsuit with all-star and took her bag

Her:am off

Me:okay bye

She came and pecked my lips and left

BONTLE

Okay I already have a job offer ,I saw this agency that was looking for exotic dancers , today is my "audtion" that's what they calling it ,I toom an uber to the stress o the website ,when I arrived i noticed that it was actually a good building, I got in and they were about 10 girls there ,I cahnged into my thong and lace bra ,I wore my high heels and i was given a number and stood there for me to be called .

.
. .
. .

Me:i got the job

Her:me too

We jumped in excitement it was me and this girl I was talking too when we were waiting for results her name is Sandy

Her: we should celebrate wanna hang tonight my treat

Me:how could I say no too that girl

We high fived while walking out the building

Her:you need a style update girl and your hair its a no
no

Me:okay don't judge I just got to joburg to hustle

Her:all i know is that you need better hair , the men we
will be dancing for are rich so they want quality

Me:that's true waitsi wait let me call my mom

I immediately took out my phone, I know her man that
she is cheating with gives her N allowance that she uses
to slay

Phone call

Me:mama

Her:oh my baby how are you, did you mänge to seduce
him

Me:it's in the works mama

Am not gonna tell her i failed miserably at that

Me:Ma i need 5k phela this man has taste he won't see
me in these old clothes

Her:eish okay my baby Patrick just sent me something

so I will send it neh

Me:now mama

Her:okay okay

I hanged up , Sandy just looked at me

Me:what!!!I want new hair

We laughed, my mom dis send the money she made it 6K ohhh i love that women

Sandy and i went to a salon and i bought a Brazilian weave, I then painted my hair so I could put on my weave

Her:you look so good babe look at you

Me:thanks honey

Her:okay were the shoes you had at the author and lets go party and get these men

Let's party

We went to this club it , looked expensive AF we got there just swaying our hips and i must say i felt sexy ,the hair helped

Sandy and were dacing and our table was filled with booze we didn't pay for

This is the life shame

REFILWE

Am so happy it's Friday, Mike's mom left today this morning she said she needed to get back to her life

My sister lives with justin and hai no
Man I don't think i like that but she is a frown was
women she can take care off herself

My baby and I were still going strong ,we go on dates ,
have fun and just enjoy each other .

Hey your girl has made friends 2 of them actually and
liberally enjoying having with them .

Am still taking my shooting lessons and am really good
,my crazy self has been evn reading mystery books and
I love them , I don't want to be oblivious to the type of
side bussines my boyfriend had

ðŸ˜ˆ,ðŸ˜ˆ,ðŸ˜ˆ, the unbelievable happend let night Mike
answered my phone last night completely unaware
that is was my dad , and that one he is no stupid he told
me he wants too see Mike this weekend meaning were
going today but only layer because he has work

Okay back to now I just got home and i decided to come
with my girls their are aphiwe and tumi , the elevator
opens and we walk in and their mouths are hanging
open

Phiwe:please pinch me is this were yoh live really

Me:yeah am still not used too it

Tumi:you your living the life wena girl

Me:ughhh it's bit even like that

I went to the fridge and madebtje sandwiches and poured juice for us

Me:join me

They came and we sat on the hair chairs

Phiwe:were gonna miss you

I laughed

Me:am coming back on Sunday stop being dramatic

We laugh again

Tumi:yeah wena le drama

We laugh again

Me:so where is jabu

She rolls her eyes

Phiwe:jabu really had to wabt naked pics of me imagine , when i sent them faceless he complained saying he can't pleasure himself if he can't see my face

Us:Ewwww man

Phiwe:exactly

Tumi : leave her chommie they are plenty of fishes in the sea

Phiwe:exactly my thoughts chommie

Lol this two like hyping each other up and that makes me laugh.....they look at me and i drink my juice

Me:what.....he.e i already have my fish so please

They laughed

Tumi:we are yet to tgis fish we hear about all the time

Phiwe:yeah where is your fish

I look at my wrist watch exactly where is this fish he said he would be here around 3 its 3:30

Me:let's go to our room i need to pack for me and this fish .

They Luagh , I quickly wash the dishes and clean up a bit Mike is a neat freak a bit....we made our way to our room , I toom a quick shower and wore my long jumpsuit wuth Sandles and i combed my hair while my friends were cracking me up

After i packed our weekender bag for me and him and i chose casual clothes for Him,beacuse he has on a suit right now , after I was done i sat on the bed with my girls

Me:he is late , then he is going to insist o driving a sports car and i hate those shots

Tumi:lol chommie you have nice life problems

Phiwe:imagine complaining about hating a sports car

We looked at each other then laughed

Me:yeah whatever guys....where is this fish anyway

We giggled

Voice:Baby

Me:bedroom

He came in looking so good , he stoped at the door holding is briefcase,and car keys , I stood up and kissed him so did he

Me:so these are my friends Tumi and aphiweguys this Mike

Him:The boyfriend

They stood up and shaked hands , no hugging my man I don't want them.to get ideas yoh

Me:they were helping me pack since your late

He let out a slight chuckle and pulled by my waist

Him:it's okay sweetheart let me go take a shower okay

I nodded and he kissed my cheek and disappeared to the bathroom,thato and aphiwe looked at me shocked

Them:that's your man

I nodded going into the lounge

Tumi:he is one of the richest bachelors in south Africa , man I have to cancel him on my list

Me:what list

We settle on the couch

Phiwe:tumi and i have a list of rich single bachelors here in SA but ke its seems like you have one on our list your lucky girl

Me:you guys are weird are you sure that your okay

I say feeling their foreheads

Phiwe:hai girl stop

Mike appeared all dressed up with the clothes i chose for him

Him:where are the car keys

Me:i put them in the watch drawer since you leave them every where

Him:sweetie don't go telling people our problem now

We laughed

Me:baby what car are we taking

Him:the Lamborghini truck

I let out a sigh of relief

Me:thanks babe

Her disappeared again

Phiwe:we should go

Me:okay let me get you a uber black

Tumi:Bolt is okay too

Me:nc i don't have the app .

I got them the uber and soon as it came they left , Mike was having a sandwich my man is sexy guys I can't deal

I went and sat on the chair next to him

Him:i like that you have friends now because my frinds are flying in next week

Me:oh yeah they finally coming back

Him:yeah ,you look good baby

Me:thanks

Him:come let's

We took our bags and every thing and we were now on the road to see my dadI hope he has a better reaction than Mike's dad because i don't be able to handle it I love Mike but daddy is my priority because my mom doesn't even care about her

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

After a long drive were here finally and we both are nervous to the core , I have never seen my man like this

Him:he is not gonna like me is he ?

Me:honeslty babe I don't know my dad is hard to read

Him:way to make a man feel better

I laughed and got out of the car to open the gate after that he drives in and parked the car , so I closed the gate and we took our bags

Knock knock

It's like hi was atbthe door because he opened immediately

Me:hi papa

Papa:oh tsontso my beautiful baby

Mike extended his hand and my dad shook it

Him:it's nice to finally meet you

Papa:you may come in

I laughed in my head thinking what would have happened if my dad's English was bad , we went on to sit at the lounge

Papa:my baby please excuse us

Me:papa we just got here

Papa:you know i don't like wadrung time so go I want to talk to this man

Yhoo okay , I tired going to my room because i can eavesdrop there but no my dad wanted me outside

I did as i was told i was at the gate when i saw a Mercedes c class dropping my mom off two house away , they were still being flirty with each so I decided to join them

When my mom saw me the panic in her eyes couldn't be hidden

Me:is this what you cheat my dad with huh,this thing

Mama:Refilwe mind your language

Me:wena don't you know this women is married

Mama:Patrick baby go this nonsense of a child
diturebed us

Pat:no , this child will respect me after all I pay her bills

Okay am not gonna lie that struck a cord because the
bitch never does anything for me nor my dad

I went closer to him and the bastard was turned
on,Icrushed his balls with my hands and squeezed
them and he was groaning in my pain while my mom
was busy rumbling at the back

Me:do me a favor and disappear from her life or i
swear I will make you disappear myself and don't you
ever i mean ever show your ass here you hear me

He didn't respond

Me:i said you hear me

He nodded vigorously

I let go of him and walked away,the dude sped away
with his cheap car I was about to go in when my mom
turned and slapped me

Me:i will let you get away with that because your my
motherbut cheat on my dad one more time i will kill
every guy you sleep with

I walked away then into the house ,my dad and Mike were laughing and watching cricket ...okay what happend because my dad is not easily persuaded , my mom walked in too and then she had the nerve to kiss my dad and she sat next to him

Mama:so you came back with him ,papa why are you meeting your daugther disrespect us by bringing a man here

Papa:he is such a nice young man don't worry i know my baby girl is in good hands

You should have seen Mike's smile

Me:daddy what did he say to you

Him:no need to wore my baby

Thwy continued watching and talking about things i don't know ,and i settled on the couch next to him while reserving my head on his shoulders .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 20

2 DAYS later

MIKE

Am glad fifi's dad likes me because i know she would side with her dad anytime those two are connected , but he warned if I break her daughters heart he will have to chop my balls off and feed them to the dogs ,he siad he just wanted to see what type of man I am ,am pleased to announce i am husband material

My baby is at class , and i am working from home today because my boys are visiting Paul and Brad are my best buddies and they went to the state's for a while to take care of bussines that side and yes we run several operation internationally and we work together .

They called telling me They are downstairs i told them to come up, I quickly go to the elevator soon as it opens we hug and fist bump but of course they are with ladies and i see Emily I narrow my eyes at them

Me:what's this ?

They walk in and slump on my couches and their ladies sit on their laps and Emily sits next to them

Brad:well we thought we would bring your lady because tonight were going out

Paul:you know to welcome us home.....come on man it's time for you to be uptight

Em:yeah Mikey i missed you anyway

She say walking on to me

Bianca:I hope you got rid of that girl ,you can't be

replacing our girl with such gold diggers

Thats Brad girl

Hope:i can't believe you sometimes but I see you got it out to your system and ready to make things right

That's Paul's girl

Me:yeah no am still with my girl

I say pushing Emily away from and intake my shirt to wear

Me:and no were not going out

Brad:wait what girl

Paul:you changed girls and you didn't tell us

Me:that's because she is special not something to be discussing with biys that don't want to grow up

They touch their hearts

Them:ouch

And the girls just roll their eyes

Em:stop kidding yiur self Mike, you know your mine and if she is so special why haven't y'all made it public yetthe media would all up your ass am good for you

Me:

Em:exactly stop resisting

She pushed me and sat on my lap

Paul:man you know you and An are good for you
public image

Brad:and y'all have been groomed to be togther it
bound to happen that you guys get married

Me:Bullshit are you guys really that backwards , stop
thinking like idiots

Paul:man you and Emily have known each other since
high school

Me:it doesn't mean anything.....and you idiots who
choses your girls for you

Them:.....

Me:exaclty

The elevator opened and my baby looked so cute , she
had on Nike long tights with a addidas crop top jersey
with belanciagas that I just bought her the other day
she then tied her hair into a neat meat

She was looking at her phone clearly not seeing the
sight of Emily sitting on my lap , i quickly tried pushing
her off but she forcefully sat

She walked to the kitchen to the fridge to get water

Fifi:babe i think am going out today am still not sure

Brad:is that her ? *He whistled*

Paul:i would also leave Emily for her

That caused her to look up and her face went from sweet to annoyed real quick

I finally managed to get Emily off me

Hope:really Mike that's her

Bianca :i was expecting someone beyond our net worth

She chuckled And left the room

Brad:Omg that ass

She my baby's body is to die for , she has a well round butt and a snatched waist , she is a short and very sexy

Me:if your not going to respect my girl in my house get the fuck out

I say and i go to our room and she is getting ready

Fifi:your friends are nice

I know she is being sarcastic

Me:am sorry babe , that just used to certain people if I may say it like that

Fifi:i really don't care what they think off me , they are your friends not mine

She gets up and i get to see her outfit,she has on a short dusty pink dress , with nude high heels ,her hair didn't change and she had a bit of make up, hell no she is not going anywhere looking that hot

Me:where you going

Fifi:out with friends.....people that actually like me

Me:Baby that's not fairplease don't go out so hot

Fifi:no am going she left the room following her to the lounge

Fifi:i don't know when i will be back bye sweetie

She pecked my lips and go ahhh she so sexy

I sighed and slumped on the couch

Me:you see what you did now , she is so sexy too sexy

Brad:can i have her

Bianca:excuse me

Paul:she is hot my god

I was not even interested in what they are saying any more FUCK SHE LOOKED SO Hot

REFILWE

I was at Tumi and Aphiwe's flat and we were watching movies

Phiwe:your crazy so you looked that hot just too kiss him off

Tumi:babe call him just too check

Me:No, I love him but I won't be a joke to his friends okay he needs to know i have a life outside off him ,and besides i respect myself to hang with such people

Tumi:you see why i love you babe you know how to take your stand

It was now 23:30 and i requested an uber back home,I got in then the elevator and they were still there except for Emily thank god I can't deal with her flat ass anymore , she is really annoying but who am i kidding she is part of the group am not

I walked in and threw my shoes on the floor

Him:babe your back

He looks tipsy

Paul:hey girl were sorry we brought the Ex here we didnt know

Me:it doent matter because she doesn't matter

Him:Babe can we talk

Me: i want too sleep

Brad:come on hang with us to say sorry

The girls stood up and left and i was doing a mini dance in my heart beacuse I was also leaving

Me:No am going to bed .

I left

BONTLE

The club is fun , inhale been dancing my butt off and this rich ok man has been throwing money all night so I decide to make my move

I go to him and sit on his lap and straddle his dick

Him:so sweet thing to much for one night

Me:how much are you paying sir

Him:1000 an hour

Me:oh goodie

Him:and break my son and your sister with my son and i will keep the money coming

Me:who are you

Him:don't worry sweetie

I followed him to the champagne room ,that's where you go if you agree to have sex with them when they have paid to it

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 21

REFILWE

I heard his friends leave and after his shower He came and pulled me closer to him for some reason I was a bit mad at him but it was not him but was those bitches that got to me,I just thought how out of my league they were and am just latching on him am basically living off of him and he is even paying for my studies , I need to move out continue with my studies am just glad my course is 3years and after I complete this one I will be left with one year , I need to get my shit together . I am not gonna leave him but I need to move out , i hope he let a me

I pretend that am asleep i really don't want to talk why i acted weird i don't want to come off as immature ,so I try by all means to stay quiet

Him:Baby you sleeping

I stay silent

Him:babe I know you have a slight snore so I know your not sleeping

Me:babe i don't want to talk

He turned me around , ughh he is so strong so he can easily turn me

Him:i don't like when you shut me out

Me:and i don't like being made a joke

Him:Baby am don't my friends didn't know i was no longer saying Emily so when they came they came with her thinking i would feel left out

Me:still baby so that's why I was thinking I should move out

He narrowed his eyes and pulled me closer

Him:what did you say

He held a tighter grip to my waist oh god

Me:Baby am not leaving you okay I just think i should have my own space you know

Him:No

Me:Baby please don't be difficult about this okay please like i said i am not leaving you

Him:that's not it you have become to mean a lot to me so you cant just want to move out just like that

He got on top off me

Him:don't let your insecurities break us okay I love you and i know you love me , so know am going to fuck you back to your sense you hear me

I was already wet

Him:Baby words use words

Me:But baby

He smashed his lips onto mine , I responded because he kept on biting my bottom lip , in seconds my nighty was off and he was between my legs , see i think i never explained that my man is huge and big so am shit scared , he has always been gentle with his strides and thrusts so this time i don't think its the case this time....he took a pillow and out it under my back giving him full access to my pussy god I looked at him and he had a mission

When he entered me he didn't just put his tip in he went full on in and i let out a loud moan and man did he pound me , he was fast , and he made sure he went full on faster and faster,it was a mixture of pleasure and pain but boy I loved it ,I had my orgasm and then he turned me over and had me from behind , he was groaning and slapping my ass

Me:oh baby ahhhh

That was my second orgasm how luck am i

This guy has tricks how he got under me their was women on top ,and he don't get me do anything he let himself do all the work

We both had our orgasms and i collapsed on top of him and he was still inside me , my nunu was on fire

Him:don't ever talk crazy am thinking of taking you to my business gala and your thinking of leaving nope your staying here

I couldn't even fight him

Me:i hear you babe

Next morning

BONTLE

Today is see day , that old guy paid me a lot of money so i saved it up and because i want to go back too school ,I think that's why I resent my sister so much is that my dad put her too school but when my dad paid for her fees after I dropped out I got very angry and have been plotting against her since

That guy paid me double to sleep with Mike but am not gonna do that He is Crazy AF after our session last night i told the owner he was rough with me so I don't want to associate myself with him , the reason I don't want to sleep with Mike is because am catching real feelings for justin so I don't want to mess that up, I have also decided not to sleep with my clients anymore

because i don't want him to feel it you know They say
can feel it

My mom has been on my case with me taking Mike
from my sister , I regret turning them against each
other yoh no being the devil's advocate is hard

Justin just got out the shower , he comes straight to bed
we decided to have a lazy day to day

Him:so what movie are watching first

Me:the perfect match

He groans and i laugh

Me:you said i should choose what i chose

Him:okay then

We sat naked and watched our movie with snacks all
over the bed ,I hope he never finds out about my
doings

EMILY

Well inthink i have let that bitch walk all over me and
well I have daddies money to make the world go round
,he has a security comapny and some of the guys are
not so legal so this is perfect for me

Am with my girls telling him of my plans

Hope: are you sure you want to do that Em

Me:oh come on hope don't all holy remember what you did to paul side chick

We laughed

Bianca:but don't do any damage okay just to scare her

Me:Yes the guys are just going to warn her ,and tell her to stay away from Mike that's it

Hope:i hope mike doesn't find out you know how he gets

Me:no I will make sure that little bitch stays quiet

She will learn do date within her league Mike is mine and i really don't like sharing,I really don't

Bianca:so when is this happening

Me:morning of the Gala I need to make sure he doesn't take her there but me it will be the first appearance since well I don't remember he has been so distant

Hope:well maybe he really loves that girl

Me:do you know how much Mike is worth , I make him mine and am set for life , that man is richer than my dad

Them:whuuu

Me:Yes so shut your pie holes and watch the master at

work

Hope was giving me weird looks she has ways had a
conscious much to my annoyance

Me and Mike were destined to be together so even
though he is not willing to fight for us i will and i know
he doesn't love well tough we will use my love no way
in hell am i letting that thing leave my life

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 22

MIKE

Its the day of the Gala and my baby girl has gone to
pamper herself my treat , she left this morning and
promised to be back on time ,I can't wait to show her
off escpecially to my best work mate Lunga ,he has told
me I will never really now ,what a big ass taste like well
won't you look at that ,I cant wait to rub it in his face so
much so he pukes

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

I have been trying to get should of her nothing am
worried ,I have too go so I will look for her after this
and she will explain why she would drop me at last

minute i mean I knew she was nervous but this is childish and unacceptable

I got ready and left with the limo i hired for us ,I wasn't mad just disappointed ,it's not like i was forcing this whole gala down her throat

EMILY

this girl is tough she beat down two of my gaurds but luckily I had man with me , am glad i didn't go for her alone she would have beat my ass I don't want to lie ,I decided to take her beacuse I saw that she is stubborn as a bull and i can't have her showing up at the Gala

Am already dressed and i see that she has given up ,we tied her up on a chair

Me:look at you where is the fight now little bitch

She just looked at me and laughed

Me:your one crazy bitch ,take care of her

I say to my men

Guy:what do mean by that miss Emily

Me:kill her

I can't have her in my way no ,no way am i letting her get between me and Mike

Fuy:the money goes up your dad know that

Me:daddy won't mind okay,just do it

I didn't think i would do this but plans change all the time

I fix my hair and dress and wear my fur coat and walk out and get into my car and instruct my driver where to go

When I arrive ,I luckily arrive when Mike does ,there are cameras everywhere so he won't push me away ,soon as he gets out I rush to him and take his hand and we walk to the red carpet hand in hand

Me:i see you came alone

I say while smukung at the cameras

Him:plans changed

He says while waving to the cameras too giving his fakest smile ,I know that face he is worried well she can forget about her all together

We walk in and soon as we do he pushes me away

Him:don't pull that stupid stunt again

He walks away and i go join my girls

REFILWE

I have never killed before but am pretty sure i am

going to need to today

I have been pretending to sleep and listening to these guys plan , well they want to pleasure themselves with me before they kill me , well hell will freeze before that happens i have vowed too myself after thabo i will never victimise me ever again

They untie me and lay me on the floor one i the guy turns too talk to the phone and the other one is undressing

I quickly kick his private parts and i kick the other ones back and he falls hitting the wall first i stand up and kick his face with my knee ,I search for their guns and i find it while requesting a uber , but i do it at the near petrol garage , I take the gun

Guy:hayi wena ntombazane

He says flinching in pain I close my eyes and shot him and i see that I hit his forehead and the other one that hit the wall is still out I just shoot him because i don't want any loose ends

After my uber calls to say it has arrived and i ask go 10more mins he lets me know he will charge me more

I take the gun i used and put it in my bag , I take out my wipes and wipe everything that I have touched i am now panicking and worried ,I take their keys and lock the room and run to the garage ,I see that my uber is waiting

When I got the apartment , I was tempted to sleep but

when i saw that dress and remembered that bitch that adrenaline came back ,I freshened up and put on my make up I changed the dress and opted for the blood red dress my baby bought for the date we cancelled because of my dad

Its a long and has a slit that is up too my thigh i tied my hair into a messy bun but it was lindo of classy ,I wore my diamond choker and wore my velvet red bottoms ,I called one of his drivers tobtake to the Gala and he agreed ,I went downstairs and the car was already there

When we arrived the driver told the bouncer i was wuth Mike I was just late so he allowed me to go in , I took my purse and walked in , when i walked in Mike was giving his speech ,soon as he saw me he went silent for a bit causing people to look at me , okay the confidence is gone now ,I felt a hide on my waist and it was brad

Brad:come sit here

I follwed him and sat at a chair reserved for me Okay levels right....Mike continued and the shock on Emily's face was too hard too hard too ignore ,I waved at her and blew her a kiss

I didn't even here my name being called by Mike at stage

Paul:hey your man is calling you

Me:what !??:!

He helped me up

Mike:Yes unknown she is hot stop staring

People laughed

When I got to the stage he helped me the stairs

And we went back of the Mic and he held menu the waist and i felt eyes piercing me

Mike:see once in a while you find that one person that understands you and loves you for you ,and i have found my one

I was blushing so hard trust me you would too

Mike:i was once labelled a playboy but am off the market ladies

They laughed again

Mike:okay have fun ladies and gentleman and baby I love you

He then kissed me and we went off the stage to slow dance,he had one hand on my waist and the other on my back ,I had my hands around his neck

Him:baby what happend i was worried

I actually wanted to cry because i felt my eyes become teary

Him:hey baby what's wrong

Me:she wanted me dead babe , she had me kidnapped and wanted me dead , I killed two people because of her

Him:who

Me:Emily

Him:what the hell

Me:the guys had on security uniforms when she left they wanted to rape me like i had no choice

All this time we had to be smiling because the cameras were on us and i looked around Emily was no where to be seen

Me:won't you look at that the blonde Barbie has disappeared, I swear when i find her she is going to

Him:babe ,baby don't be controlled by anger and bybthe way you look so sexy , that's why I pulled on the stage ,I saw all the horny bastard looking at you

I laughed the sing ended and we walked hand in hand to the bar , the dude wad not letting go off me and i loved it

We got to the bar and some of his friends were there and some associates am guessing

Him:boys

He says as he stands behind me and holds on to my waist

Him:Baby this is lunga and phil and you know these hooligans

They laughed and i did too

Lunga: so you are real

He looked at me from top to bottom

Him:Lunga

He warned

Lunga:where did you find her

Paul:yeah I need to go wherever she is made

Brad:i would do anything she wants

Him:well that's what am here for right baby

I nodded a d he kissed my neck and i let out a low moan and he chuckled

Him:boys me and the lady are leaving now

Lunga:what no am still admiring the beauty

Him:bye boys

He took my hand and we left , he called y his boys to clean up the mess and when we got home we had sex all over that apartment

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 23

REFILWE

I have not been coping at all , I am having nightmares and i barely sleep at night , to make it worse ever since the Gala dinner i am all over the news , "MIKE'S NEW GIRLFRIEND WAS AT SCHOOL" mxm pathetic , but the nightmares have given me the chance to study a lot , books are now my distraction

Mike has been supportive he says it will get better with time ,but I am never killing agian but that doesn't mean i will not cut the disrespect when i have too.

I just got out of class and my girls were waiting for me

Phiwe:hey miss celeb

Me:i hate that name phiwe

Tumi:babes you should take it and embrace it my love

Me:whatever guys

My driver came and i told him to take us to the mall (yeah Mike insisted i have a driver just till i have a driver).

When we got to the mall went to a restaurant its one of Mike's so yeah, soon as we fit the we had waiters and the manger helping us, we had our food and we were just talking and i realised that Mike and i never have protected sex and i am not on the pill shit

Tumi:hey language

Me:i said that out loud

Phiwe:Yes and what's the problem babe

Me:am not on the pill and Mike and i literally have sex everyday.

Tumi choked on her drink

Phiwe:damn girl way to show off right

We laughed

Me:am serious though my dad would kill me if I had a child before marriage and i never wabt to disappoint him

Tumi:just to be sure now did you have yiur period last month

Me:Yes,yes i did

Tumi:this months

Me:i should be going next week

Phiwe:see nothing to worry about babes

We both gave her stares , Aphiwe is too care free for her own good

Me:can we go buy the tests as in now

I paid the bill and we went to closest pharmacy we can find ,I bought 4 different tests ,on our way to the car We saw Emily, hope and Bianca,jeez i can't wait to get my hands on that girl and when i do she better hope i don't lose my shit

Emily looked like she wanted to get away but her friends didn't want to , the car parked closely to them and as i was about to go in Bianca said something that caught my attention

Me:what did you say

Bianca:o said hoes like you don't last long with men like Mike He is going to beg Em to take him back your just the flavour of the month

Okay she added more too what she said

Me:and what are you Bianca flavour of the year , oh wait no your just daddy's little girl with a trust fund

Em:well atleast we don't use men for money

Me:watch your back Em because am coming for you

I got in the car and the driver drove off

Tumi:what did you mean by that

Me:nothing just scaring her hoping she gets the hint

Phiwe:well way to go girl they need to know they can't play you like that , your the main girl

Me:am the only girl and if that ever changes i would leave his ass am no second thought babe I know my worth

Tumi:thetha wena girl

We got to the building ,now to get to our floor you have to punch in a pin just safety precautions we put in place since the incidentAfter that we went to the apartment .

They boys were watching cricket*innate that shit* and won't you look at that even Justin is here

Me:Boys

They starting complaining and rumbling

Brad:who are you calling boys were men

Paul:you heard that men

The girls and I chuckled and i went to kiss my man and i sat on his lap

Me:well if you were men you would be able to hold your little dogs on a leash but no they srebjyst to much for and that makes you biys

Jay:why am i involved

I laughed

Me:your with my sister , bet you ,you can't even tell her what to do

Tumi and phiwe were looking and sizing up the boys but my friends are not gonna date these little shits no can do

Paul:how rude are you,yiur not even gonna introduce us to your friends

Me:there is no need to know them Paul around them keep it in your pants

Mike just laughed

Mike:i don't think they can do that babe escpecially if you tell them not to do it

Why are they flirting....I then remembered the tests

Me:I have to do something

Mike:you okay

Me:yeah am okay j just need to do something i will be back now now

I quickly left the room and hurried to the ensuit i peed on all the stick and set my timer to 5 minutes

I was actually nervous , am not dtpid to the fact that we have had a lot of sex without a condom but please god have mercy on me am not ready to be a parent

The timer went off and what the hell is the meaning of this

LUCY

Well you all know me as the housewife and my asshole husband but am more than that , I have a degree in bussiness and accounting and i have a modeling agency that I started a year ago just to keep myself busy and for the oppportunity to travel a d free myself from my husband

I also have a boyfriend , I mean am human and i have needs too , see my husband thinks I am idiot and i am not ,I have money saved so when he starts his shit I know i am covered.

Me:Antonio baby

We just had mind blowing sex at hotel a that we always go to when we have our fun

Him:Yes

He comes out the shower and i bite my lip look at how sexy he is ,and yes he is younger than me

Me:i was jyst checking on you are you Lmost done

He comes and pins me to the bed and kisses me and of course i welcome the kiss he spreads my legs open and puts his fingers in my nuna and he chuckles

Him:i like how your always ready for me

And i just moan in pleasure no man has ever done this to me

He then removes his finger but replaces it with hi dick and i love the feeling of him entering me it's something out of this world really

He pounds me and thrusts so fast that I was screaming and moaning loudly if this hotel was not sound proof people would be reporting a case Lol

After our session we took our shower together and we went to relax and enjoy each others company

Him:i don't get why you don't leave that thing of yours he clearly doesn't appreciate you he never will

Me:not this again , you know how dangerous dylan is he will come for you and i care too much for you and if eything were tobhappen too you I wouldn't be able to live with myself

Him: am a man Lucy that huts my ego you know

Me:stop it

Him:you know i should punish for not thinking I can't take care if myself

Me:really

I say in a flirty seductive voice

Without any warning he turned me over and had me from behindI can't deal yoh.

BONTLE

life has been bearable am making money and justin is not aware of the job i have.... tonight he is not here So I invited Sandy over for wine and she agreed to come over .

She just got here and we're looking at he gossip news and my sister is all over them ,she is living the life yoh i am so jealous of her but am trying really hard too i have a better life so am pushing that jealousy behind me and moving forward.

Sandy:babe really that's your sister

Me:Yeah she got the richer and better looking bother

Her:you don't say I mean look at him

Me:stay off Sandy this a first time in a long time she is

happy okay so just lay off please

I feel guilty my sister life is a lot complicated than it seems , and if she finds out all the things hidden from her she is going to lose it so from now on am trying not to cause her any stress and any heartache

You see i don't know why i suddenly feel sorry for her but i do and from now on am working on making her life less difficult well from my side i will never interfere with it anymore , am not stupid i still would like to have Mike for myslef but he loves her the man proclaimed his love for her in front of cameras so who is we mara

Her:your so annoying but because yiur my bestfriend i will listen okay

Me:thank you

I look at her and i see the bitch is not sincere at all , I hope she doesn't do anything about it .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 23

MIKE

The guts just left and so did Fifi's friends, but my baby

has not shown up at all am a but worried ...I make my way to the room when i open I see her looking herself in the mirror

Me:you look beautiful baby

Her:that's not what am looking atdo i look fat , or have i gained wait baby talk tthe

Me:no you haven't gained weight ,what's with the question any way?

She points at the bed and i see what things just sitting there

Me:so what that

Her:Just look like and don't annoy me

Shit , I went and there were pregnancy tests and i got excited i don't mind being a dad but two off them were positive and the other two were negative

Me:so what does this mean

Her:do i look like i know am just as confused but I hope am not

I narrow my eyes at her

Her:don't look at me like that do I look like am ready to be a parent ,your not even ready your self and i don't want to disappoint my dad he has done a lot for me and i owe him that much

She was now crying I went to hug her

Me:i know baby

Her:marry me first then make me pregnant not the other way round you hear me

We laughed

Me:Okay lets make sure you are or are not okay my love i will call the doctor to come here in the morning

She just nodded,she went inside the sheets and i took off my clothes and follwed her in and i pulled her to a very tight cuddle

Her:Jesus babe am not running away

Me: I like to be sure you know

She laughed and kissed my arms and we fell asleep

MORNING

The doctor just left and comfirmed that my baby is not pregnant I didn't realise it but I was actually relived that she is not pregnant don't get me wrong i want to have babies with her but am not ready to share her attention with anyone

She is in the shower and am making breakfast for us Brad and Paul walk inwhy in the world did I give them my pin

Paul:mother fucker is whipped you cooking now

Brad:that ass has you doing whatever hey

They laughed

Me:shut the fuck up....what are you doing here anyway

Them:work

I wipe my hands and they show me a video, of the Bulgarian hit man pledging his allegiance to me

Me:what's this

Paul:that's Marcus the number one wanted serial killer in Russia, he retired a few months back but when he went against his gang because they killed his wife he went rouge

Me:Marcus i have heard of him apparently he is a hot head

Brad:not true ,he is actually a nice person but when he goes nuts he goes nuts and he does not take shit , so we sort of approached him and he said he needs loyalty you always preach loyalty right

Me:yeah but how am i supposed to trust him

Paul:Yes you can trust him he always comes through on his jobs never misses and always does a clean job

Me:we might need him for the Cuban job

Brad:exactly

Me:Okay send a jet to Russia i will make calls to get him a apartment and start up cash and a whole new identity

Paul:nice work prick

Me:oh fuck off Paul

I went back finishing breakfast

Brad:so tell me what 're your plans today

Me:oh i don't know movies ,sex,pop corn, more sex then let me think yes sex again

They laughed so hard

Her:Baby where are your hoodies i can't find them in here

Me:I packed them on your side if the closet

Her:Thank you baby

Paul:man you love your hoodies

Me:i love her more

Her:and i love you more

She says taking bacon from the plate and she has on my hoodie only and my sleepers

Me:don't you like anything i get you

Her:i love yours more babe

She says and kisses me and i hold her ass that's my happy place

Brad:no shit guys were right here

Me:get out

Paul:so Fifi think you can hook us up witj your friends

Her:hell no and have your barbies all up in my was like Emily is

Brad:Bianca won't be a problem

Me:no you whores can't sleep with one Vagina

Paul:oh look who is talking

Her:yeah well she gets on Vagina now and he goes looking for another i will shoot his dick off

Brad and Paul looked shocked and i knew very well that she meant it

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 24

ELIAS (fifi's dad)

You know all know that I would do anything for my baby girl

But there is a lot hidden to refilwe ,there is a lot she doesn't know and i am so scared that she will hate me but I did what did for her own good and i would do it again in a heartbeat

What matters now is that she lives a happy life and i have no intention of telling her and i hope Bontle does the same thing.

BONTLE

I just got out from work and Justin wanted to pick me up but i told him I will meet will meet at the resturant, i just changed into appropriate clothes and as i was about to go I bumped into Sandy

Her:hey girl oh my you look so good

Me:thanks i have a date with my man

She laughs and i fold my arm waiting for explanation for her laughter

Her:you really think he is your man girl bye...she is going to leave your ass soon as she finds out what your

doing

Me:oh babe just so you didn't know this is my last day , i purchased a saloon a few days ago with the money i have been saving perks being a stripper you get a lot of money in one night and if your smart like me you don't waste it on hair and clothes

Her:your quitting just like that

Me:i got what i wanted so why not , and like i said step away from my sisters man I have seen you googling him step off if you don't want my heel on your throat

I say then walk, all the guilt of mistreating my sister is so strong,I don't even know why i did but all I know is my mom is a big part of it and i really need to talk to her about this or maybe not she will just fuel my jealousy all over again so I should just stay clear of her

.
. .
. .
. .

I just got to the resturant and i see him , I quickly jog to him and kiss him a d the cheek

Him:i have already ordered for us hope you don't mind

Me:it's okay you know what i like

We chuckle

Him:i want us to talk

I don't know why but I got nervous a bit what if he wants to break up with me

Me:Yes

Him:Okay am not gonna lie to you when we firts started seeing each other it was just for fucking nothing more nothing less but ey you are slowly creeping into my heart and i don't want you seeing other people

Me:are you serious

The waiter came with our food and he left

Him:yeah I was going to break it off but I thought for once i should listen to my heart not the dick

I laughed and leaned in for a kiss and he kissed me back

Him:so what do you say

Me:of course i want us to be exclusive

I was really happy maybe not being a hoe changed things for the better i hope things won't turn for the worst because i really do like him a lot.

Him:so I don't bullshit bontle, I don't want you cheating and making me an idiot not when am comitted to you

Me:i swear I won't cheat babe I swear

We ate our dinner and after we had desert

Him:don't I you need help with advertising your saloon

Me:well babe it was already operating i just bought it because the owner is living to the state so am just stepping in and continuing

Him:am proud of you babe

Me:thanks baby

I have done things am not proud off but atleast i have one thing that ,I can be proud off I have never manged or done anything in business ,I want to ask the help of my sister because thats what she is studying but first i have to apologise to all the I'll i have brought to her it's not her I fault i am an insecure person that cabt deal with their emotions accordingly

After good conversation we went home and you know what happend moss

REFILWE

I was thinking of changing my hair jyst for a bit so Mike gave me his card to do whatever i want since i never spoil myself I decided why not its not like he minds

After a heavy shopping spree i went to the salon to get my hair done a d I was helped my a gay guy i didn't mind as longas he knows what he is doing

Him:so babe what type if hair to you want we have all kinds so what's your budget

Some lady spoke i don't even knw where she popped up from

Her:ore budget why would you need a budget when your man is Mike Anderson yho hee girl

They laughed

Him:no ways , wena why do you still have this on your head

Be says pulling pulling a strand of hair

Me:i happen to love my natural hair ,am changing because we're hosting a dinner soon i don't want to be boring same old me

Her:girl you must be living the life

Me:it's not bad

He was already doing my hair and Jesus my butt actually hurt

Me:i saw that there is going to be a new owner ,are you guys closing for some time

Him:No babes ,we luckily got a nice new owner that is willing to continue with the old staff so I won't be out of a job

Me:oh she must be nice then

Him:yeah she is but I have only met her once

After he was done paid and he was busy styling it when my phone rang and of course it was Mike

Phone call

Me:babe

Him:when I you coming i miss you

Me:don't lie you just got home

Him:Okay fine but I thought I would find you here

Me:Am getting my hair done babe ,i have a dinner to host soon my love Sino need to look good you know

Him:what dinner

Oh did I forget to mention that he is not invited

Me:oh sweetie that's because your not invited

Him:Okay we will talk more about this ,and please hurry home

Me:Okay baby

He hanged up and i put my phone in my sling bag

After i was done the driver came and took my shopping

bags and i was walking to the car when i saw Emily standing next to it with two body gaurds

Em:live it up am going to get you and when i do you won't see it coming bitch

Me:oh my sweet baby you won't see it coming and trust me it's sooner than you think

I pushed her and her gaurds tried to touch me when she instructed them not too

Me:your pathetic

I say as i am getting into the car and we drive away.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Him:what dinner babe and why is your man not invited

He has been nagging me abiut the dinner since I got here and i am not planning on telling him anything

Me:beacuse its a girls night oytbtype of thing that's why I need you to make yourself scarce okay

He is bothered i can tell

Me:babe after the girls leave you can do whatever you want with me whatever

I emphasis

Him:really

Me:Yes

I say with my sexy smirk on my face

Him:Okay okay my love

See this is a special dinner its going to teach people to respect me and like i said they arevnt going to see ur coming and oh boy am i ready for it...

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 25

ELIAS

I saw them yesterday its like they are looking for me ,I have manged to stay hidden for so long how did they find where I stay , Jesus I am going to lose my daughter , if these fuckers find her they are going to make sure I never see her agian

I just got home and my wife is about to go but I can't ride her leaving and them seeing her

Me:were are you going ,you can't leave not for a while
Martha

Her:what do you mean i have a appointment at i have
to get my nails done papa guy

Me:Mosadi ke wena just listen to me just this once

Her:hay no no , loom at my nails i can't

She took her bag.....Dammit this wife is going to be the
death of me I don't know what i am going to do when
those people find me , am really scared .

BONTLE

I just signed my contract with the salon , and today is
the last of the owner so I gave her time to her goodbyes
i am on my way to talk to my sister hoping that she
atleast hears me out ,the last we saw each she was
handing me my bags at Justin's place after she just beat
the shit out of me so I am basically shitting my pants

I got to the building paid the uber and walked in ,just
not to be rude I decided to call her I hope she answers

She didn't answer the first call ,I called again and
answered on the 2nd ring

Her:hello

Me:hey sis ,can I please come see

Her:what do you want bontle

Me:please am already downstairs

She sighed

Her:1332

Me:what's that

Her:that's the pin that opens , the security will allow you

Me:thank you

She handed up

I went upstairs and when the elevator opned she was not in sight

Me:hello

Her:am coming Bee you can sit

She said from the other room and i sat , their apartment is so classy , and i laugh at the white because my sister swore she will never ever own white furniture because she hates cleaning

They come out looking all cute togther , what was i thinking trying to take Mike He always has a smile planted on his face

Her:hey ,what 're you doing

Me:can i talk to you

I say looking at Mike I want privacy phela

Him:Okay babe I guess I will start now with my biys
night out

Her:Okay my love

They kiss and he leaves

Her:Mike no girls

He chuckles and nods

Me:it's good to see you and you look really happy

She sits next to me

Her:well it's because am not stressed how will you try
to seduce my boyfriend

Ouch

Me:true , and am sorry , it just that you have had it all
and my jealousy got the better of me a d I took it out on
you am So so so sorry

I didn't notice i was crying till i flet her thumb wiping
the tears on my cheek

Her:why though bontle , I was nice till i got tired , you
and mama always made sure that you were in my

throat

Me:and am sorry I won't say i have a vilid reason for hating but.... but.....Am sorry

Her:it's okay, am not sure what this means for us but ,I don't hate you I just don't trust you , and maybe I will some time

Me:i understand

I decided not too ask her help about bussiness
I don't want her to think that I apologised for her help
it will not sound sincere at all , I will ask justin till my relationship with her is a bit better

After it was silent a bit weird until i noticed she was dressed up

Me:you look nice and i like your hair

Her:yeah I have things to take care off today , and i did my hair yesterday

Me:well yiur sister owns a salon now so I would appreciate you do your hair there

She hugged and jumped on me , God that felt so good
....I hugged her too

Her:am sorry , but wait how did you get the capital for buying a salon ,buying property let alone a bussines

I had to lie I can't let her own the things I have been

doing i just can't

Me:oh i got a loan it was hefty but I didn't mind

She held my shoulders

Her:well I am proud of you , it's good.to have your own thing that you can call yours don't ever depend on a man that's why I didn't quit school even though i wanted too

Me:thanks so much

She stood up and fixed her hair and wore her shoes

Me:your style has changed i love it I couldn't stand that you hid such a good body

Her:well I had to change god and Mike's likes seeing my ass so

She laughed she really does look good

Me:Okay let me go and thanks for listening

Her:it's okay

We hugged and i left feeling a bit lighter

I just didn't know how heavy the burden of hating someone for no reason at all

REFILWE

Well wonders will never end right my sister actually apologised but I will get to that some other time i have to deal with I little pest that has been on my way

Now i know I can't kill her because she is high profile and what not so am just going tk show her what she will deal with,I have to show her am not scared of her at all and she will learn to respect me

This morning when my baby was taking a shower I texted Emily to meet him but it's me oh shoot you get it right ,so the bitch was so excited to meet Mike that she sent a nude , I sent to my phone and deleted it from him , this is working out perfectly that she sent it out the picture now my threat is going to be my effective ,lol she even showed her Vagina *wow this is gold for me *

I had on my nude short dress with prada Sandles and my hair well you know how it looks a set a romantic dinner for two and played some romantic music and i went to sit in the bedroom

As I was waiting for the elevator top open , a few moments later it did a d I peeked to look she had a coat on and and under it am guessing it's lingerie , Jesus how thirsty is she

Her:Mike baby am here , I just knew you would come to your senses

I mean i did set a romantic dinner for two right so why not ,I took of my dress and changed my shoe to my red bottoms *need new ones I can't slay with just one pair * I had on my lady thong and bra , am gonna have fun

with this

Her:Mike

I waltzed to the room like that and she was so shocked i wanted to laugh

Her:what what is this

Me:i invited you to dinnerLIKE what you see

I twirled for her

Her:are you sick

I got closer to her and slapped the lipstick off her face

Her:ahh you bitch

She said while holding her cheek ,I pushed to sit and i out my heel on her thigh

Me:you pushed Me Emily ,but you don't listen you and your little entourage making jokes about me ,talking shit , making moves on my man , almost getting me killed ,your little goons almost raped me do you know what you made me do ,huh, you made me do the

I slapped her so hard her face almost crashed on the table

I took of her coat forcefully and took one of Mike's belt and i whooped her ass all over that house she was screaming and yelling i have never laughed so hard in

my life , after 10 whole mintes i stoped and i pushed to the couch and sat on her were both in lingerie mind you .

I sat on her with my putting between my legs and i strangled her ,and she was panting for air.....as i was about to tell her , her shit the elevator door opened and the guys walked and i didn't even give them my attention at all

Her:Mike....Mike please help

I slapped her and i immediately got her attention and yes i was still strangling her I went as far as digging my long nails in her neck

Me:now listen to meyou see me turn and walk away.....you see me in a resturant or a shop leave ,don't even look or think about me or I swear what am doing to you will feel like a tickle and you ever tell yiur precious daddy about this I will post that picture of you and plaster it all over social media and the news you flinch in pain at the mention of my name ...did i make my self clear

The biys were just watching at this point

Me:Bitch did I stutter

She shook her head with difficulty

I stood up from her and she sprinted out of the place , okay am naked ,but I was too pumped to care ,the elevator opened and i threw her can't and there she was like a little weakling of a bitch She was

Mike:Baby what's this

Me:Girls night are fun aren't they

Brad and Paul laughed and i walked out , feeling really proud .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 26

MIKE

Okay I was really turned n by what i just saw but what the hell brad and Paul are still laughing their asses off as they sit down

Brad :the only sad part is that i didnt get to see aphiwe , I think that girl likes me

Paul:Bianca is going to kick your butt

Brad:hey am keeping my options open okay don't kill my mojo

My baby walked in her silk short gown

Her:my friends are not options Brad

I went to her and hugged from behind and kissed neck

Paul:sooo?

Am glad he is the one fishing because i don't even know how to ask

Her:so what , if you want to ask something ask Paul

Brad:oh screw it what was that you know...you and Emily that was super sexy by the way

Me:fuck you brad don't be looking at her that way

She chuckled

Her:i was teaching her manners ,you know...something money can't teach you RESPECT

Me:what were you doing looking like...you know

Her:that was the dress code sweetie

Brad:can i be invited please

Her:if you want your ass kicked and whipped then sure come over

What is she talking about I think she saw how surprised we looked

Her:did you think we were making out , or having sex

I choked on my saliva

Her: geez baby that's only a fantasy like i said i was teaching her respect nothing more

Paul: Okay remind me not too get on my bed side

Her: yeah don't

After an hour or so the guys left and we were in bed cuddling and making out here and there

Her: Mike baby

Me: ohhhh what do you want

She laughed

Her: have a little faith sweetheart geezI just wanted to say if you ever want to break me , hurt me and cut me to the core cheat then you will have finished me

Me: why would you ever say that , j would never cheat on you

Her: babe your Mike Anderson your faced with hoes throwing themselves at you all the time , so don't say you will never

I turned her to look at me

Me: i swear my love i would never cheat ,but there is no leaving me ,no man is ever having you, you have this dick for the rest of your life

She laughed

Her:i never thought I would end up with white dick , oh this thing we call life

We laughed again

Him:but I love you okay , and i would never dream of hurting and i am not joking no man should even think of dating you, I will murder them

She laughed

Me:am not joking sweetie

Her:please same goes for you baby

She got on top of me and well you know what happened

NEXT MORNING

LUCY

My husband traveled topsshhhh who am i kidding i don't know where he went I have been spending time with Antonio a lot its has gone as far as he spent a night at our house

I have been a little sick lately and i have not seen him today

I don't know but I feel like am pregnant ,I have not been pregnant for a long time so It sort off doesn't feel right , I can't be pregnant Dylan is going to lose so I

have to go to the doctor soon

I am meeting Antonio at our usual hotel room

After i arrive i find him eating , oh well he is not naked that's weird

Me:hi babe are you okay

He laughs and comes and gives me a kiss, we have been dating for 2years and i still can't get over his kiss

Him:let's do something different today you know like talking about us we never do that we just fuck and have fun, let's talk

He takes my hand and i sit down but his food smells horrible

Me:babe what is that hun

Him:am having sushi our favariot

I was about to talk when i felt the urge to puke i ran and puked in the toilet , SHIT SHIT SHIT

Him:are you okay

I flushed the toilet and rinsed my mouth

Me:I think am pregnant

He dropped his wine glass and the red wine spilled everywhere

Him:whatwhat are you saying

Me:i have been feeling some type of way and now am puking and feeling nauseous ,baby am pregnant and am scared

Him:we have to go ,skip the country or something , we can be together and you can forget your crazy husband and we can finally be happy Lucy we won't have to hide anymore

Me:i have kids here okay they still need me

Him:your kids are grown and you know that

Me:let me talk to my eldest son first he should know what to do maybe he will talk to his dad to sign divorce papers

Him:Divorce you will leave him

I have always wanted to leave him for the longest time now this is the perfect opportunity leave him right i mean it's the perfect time really

Me:Yes that's what i want , thats what i need and am scared if I don't I will leave that house in a body bag

He got scared

Him:is he really that bad

Me:he thinks I don't know but there are things he does

that are not legal

Him:Okay leave Him then please babe even if your not pregnant I want you, I mean i need you to leave him please for us

I need to leave his ass I can do this

UNKNOWN

Narrated

Two men are looking for fifi with eveything they want to take her ,beacuse she belongs with them , and won't you look at that Martha is working with them she knows very well she shouldn't but her need to make money always overshadows her thinking all the time

Her:pat me firts and i will call bontle and ask for her address

Him:you better not playing me or I will kill you

She was scared but money people the root of all evil that's what they say right

Her:i would never cross you okay

They reached their agreement she was paid 2million yes that's how head they want her and she called bontle she lied to her and said they want to visit her her and the dad and thas how they got the address of where fifi lives .

What do they want with her? Who are they? And the biggest question yet ? Why do they want her so badly and why are they showing up now ?

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 27

UNKNOWN

Me:i don't think i have time to wait , we can just go and get her

Am with my brother and he is a bitch sometimes and it annoys me

Him:can you use your head for once we found the girl and now we know we where we can find her for now lets make sure we get everyone this side ,use your head for once

Me:don't be a dick

Him:stop being a idiot then

He tries to walk out

Me:what do you think he wants with her ,all these years he wants her , and that man ELIAS has made sure to hide her well

Him:i don't know but I don't think he cares , you know how he is , he is the devil in human form

Me:you can say that again , this gonna be a ride for sure

Him:yeah sure is

He settles on the chairs and pours whiskey

Him:i have been following her around, I can't believe she has grown that much , it seems like yesterday when she was screaming her lungs out depriving us of sleep

We both chuckle

Me:yeah she was a rowdy one , whatever caused her to be taken is besides me

Him:yeah and he never wanted us to look for her , i don't know what's wrong with him , I know he is heartless but this is too much even for him

Me:nothing surprises me with him anymore ,and if we dare defy him ,were as good as dead , to him nothing matters more than loyalty, something he wants yet he lacks it

He gulps down all the whiskey in one go and pours another glass

Me:stop you need a clear head when he comes later today

Him:whatever man.

I go and get a rest , we have been at it for weeks now and i am now tired , I just need a clear head when everything goes down , I need my emotions in check .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

My nap took longer than i thought and now i have to get ready because i hot a text they are coming on their way here ,I go wake my bother up and then we get ready for their arrival

We sit down and he mumurs something that gets my attention and why the hell didnt he mention this before

Me:what did you say

He looks down as he gulps down another glass of whiskey and pours again

Him:i said he is with Anderson Okay

He said half yelling

Me:well fuck you why didn't you tell , tgis changes a lot of shit

Uhhhh my brother is such a idiot sometimes

Him:i know okay I thought it was just a fling he always has but today I saw them you can't deny that they are in love

"FUCK" i say as i punch the wall the maid comes

Me:DAMMIT

Her:Sir they have arrived

We walk to the door and welcome them to the house, this our new home we might as well get used to it I think to myself

My sister, my father's wife she has no hear that one i tell you, then him the all mighty Khabazela that's what she want to be called anyway

Him:Good job on finding the house boys

Mxm not even a hello , i hate him sometimes honestly

Me:it's was not a problem baba big houses are every

I say to him completely worried , Anderson is the big dog compared to us ,I know very well of him and where she found him is beyond me honestly ,this is going to make things ten times harder right now i am not even sure that he doesn't know of us , people think he is this sweet white guy , that's not what i know I have seen him slaughter , I mean slaughter man mercilessly and he makes it his bussines that he knows what goes around him and that's why I want us to be wary of this situation

They all settle down except for my sister She is furious that we have had to move, but ke i know baba doesn't care she is just throwing tantrums like always

Baba:so have you found her because i don't see her anywhere here?

Me:Yes baba we have found him its just that we might have a slight hiccup that could hinder our plans

My brother then talks

Him:i have been following making sure that i make sense of her movements,and it with no doubt that she is in a relationship with Anderson

His eyes grow wide in shock i presume

Him:WHAT !!!

Him:Yes baba i didn't know till recently i really didn't know

Baba:FUCK him continue with the plan i want her here and i mean now so nothing changes

FUCK why is he being stupid now

Me:babe you have to understand that he runs this city wether we like it or not, were no longer in Durban

I try to reason with him

Him:i said come with a plan I want her Friday maybe deadline will wake you up

He takes his wife and the maid shows them their room

My bother looks tired honestly and quite frankly i am tired too but when he speaks we follow we don't have a choice at all

Let me introduce myself my name us zweli Dlamini and i am 27 years old , my brother Menzi is 25 and Nokhanyo my sister is 20 , see years ago my father had a affair with his secretary (she was white) and when she fell pregnant my dad lost it she told her to get rid of the baby but she refused, after she gave birth my dad killed her and took the baby all was well until she was about 3 years when he was planning on selling her to the highest bidder i don't know what happened but she was kidnapped and we never saw her again sonyeah right now we need her ,he is the only one that can save our father

MIKE

I have noticed someone has being following since yesterday, am no fool i can see everything that happens around me , today i have a lunch date with Marcus the Bulgarian remember him ...yes He has made ,I am taking Fifi witj because well I don't want to look suspicious with him so my girl will be the one to make us neutral

She is taking forever to get ready and i really don't like being late

Me:babe

Her:10mins babe

Me:you said that an hour ago baby

Her:I swear love i am now done

She says appearing looking so hot ,I think my mouth was wide open

Her:by that face I know i killed it

I just nod because dammit she was slaying yoh

She had on a nude figure hugging short dress with red gladiator high heel , and she has her afro curly hair and my baby is hot

I take her hand and we take her to the the car when we arrive to the resturant and i see him soon as we arrive at the table and my lady sits and i following after openig her chair for her

Her:Marcus

Wait how she know him

Marcus:my lady and the big boss i see

He say in his accent

Me:Marcus a pleasure and i must say i think i am going to need you sooner than I expected

Her:what do you mean the men just got her

I see the men that have been tailing me and i can never be to safe i have fifi to take care of

I tell him that these men have been following

me:but don't act now , I have to know what they want and who is sending

Her:this is the shit i hate now we have to look over our backsbe happy I love you

Marcus:i can get on the job now if you want

I hand him the bag I came

Me:those are just the basics ,there is a black card in there I wite the pin you will find in there ,there's is a new new phone ,we know you as Marcus but the system knows you as Thomas Smith okay

He nods and fifi laughs

Me:babe what now

Her:really Thomas Smith

Marcus:i wanted to say that but

Her:he is your bossI know am the boss so it goes the either way around

Why is my baby making me look weak in front of him

Me:babe

I try to warn

Her:Okay am so sorry love

She says and kisses my cheek , this women is showing my weaknesses lol

Him:you know i don't have a place to stay

Me:about that your going to have to stay with us for a while because of your identity issues i couldn't get you a place as soon as i wanted too

Him:that's I'd the Mrs doenst mind

Her:i like you already,it's okay you can stay with us

Me:Okay now that its settled van we go , i want to see something now I have a bad feeling but those two

We stand settle the bill and go ,in the car Marcus and fifi are chatting up this guy is so friendly for a serial killer but am not gonna leave my gilr alone with him ,we arrive and fifi show him where is going to be sleeping .

She is in the shower and my boy just sent me footage of the road were were in i ask him to do a face recognition scan but he can't because picture is too blurry its okay for now I have to make that fifi is

safe.....I know i can take of myself

Marcus has been looking at me for a update.

Him:so

Me: i don't if am paranoid but whenever am with my girl seem like we get followed ,I hacked to her school cameras and saw the very same car that was tailing us here , I don't know if it's a hunch but am pretty sure some is following her not me

Him:if anything they say about you is true then you have to follow your gut

Me:i need to find a way to get her to study at home

Him:and i don't mind being a body guard in the mean time as i settle in

Me:thanks my man but I am also watching you,your still new so don't get offend

Him:i would never it's refreshing to see a men take care of his women like this

We both gulp down our glasses of whiskey

Me:i don't like that I don't know who they are ,and who cilyf be after her , she is clean

I started thinking mayne it could be Emily's father , but that men is as weak as they come he wouldn't dare try me like that I have to figure this shit out soon or my

baby will be in trouble , and i wouldn't like that to happen not while am alive

.
. .

I just stepped out to go to the warehouse and i am informing the boys about my predicament

Me:so I want her follwed and make sure you always have eyes on her all the time you hear

Them:yes/sure boss

Me:i have a body guard that will be close distance with her i want you to also keep an eye on him i don't trust him as yet

After that I go to the jewlary store and bought her a 32carat bracelet and i hide a tracker in it ,I want her to always wear it so i went on a splurge and bought her more a few more jewels ,it's not like i can't afford,after the shopping spree i go home,I find Marcus eating and i see my plate and join him *i was hungry okay*

Him:she is a good cook i couldn't get used to this

Hhee this guy

Me:don't

He laughs

Him:you have great taste in women my man ,she is one
Hell a women a women ...she is funny too

Okay is he trying to test me

Me:i know

He sighs with a smile

Her:she is also a good cook can you taste this

No no man this guy

Me:will you stop raving about MY women

He busts out laughing

Him:am just teasing men ,I wouldn't even dare

Me:damn straight he wouldn't

After earing i go to bed and notice that she is asleep but
no she not because i can't hear hear her snore

I get in bed and pull her closer to me

Her:did you see how hot Marcus is baby

Okay what the hell

Me:he is okay

Her:i mean he has bored shoulders , he is well belt and

he looks like he is packing

Someone hold me please before I lose it

Her:well too bad am stuck with you its not like i can make you look hotter than him

Someone teach me a tswana word so I can curse her out

She then busts out laughing an gets on top of me

Her:i can't belive you fell for that be is okay looking baby don't worry she says lauging agian

Two can play this game

Me:you can forget about all the things I bought

i say smirking and tuck myself in and close my eyes ,she then shakes me

Her:Baby what gifts

Me:.....

Her:don't be like that Mike you can't just say that then shut your big eyes and expect me to sleep

Why si she insulting me now Lol

Her:you know what fine ,I don't care about yiur stupid gifts,go to hell for all I care

See payback is a bitch,I love her crazy ass

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 28

ZWELI

2days

I think we blew it because her security is tight AF she has a body guard and dammit she has 10 people watching out for her from afar , we do this it might get her hurt and that's not what we want nor need at this moment . We need a different approach and knowing my dad he is going to have difficulty adjusting to the new plan ,but like i said Mike is no fool

I just got home thinking i might have a opportunity to grab her when she is alone but no way in hell , it's like they see me but avoid me for some reason , so I just left and came home because there was no point

I go to the lunge where everyone is sitting and they all look at me thinking I have her

Baba:Ao Zweli where is the girl kanti

Me:i told you baba he is with Anderson,her security is so tight that if I try and i mean try there is going to be a breakout fight and who knows what will happen to her , we can't risk that

Menzi:what do we do then ,we just can't risk baba dying, we need to do something

Nokhanyo:well this is pointless you guys are failing and really into my have time for this nonsense

Me:go tour not even needed here nxa

Nokhanyo:Baba talk to your son

Baba:Nokhanyo leave us

She leaves mumbling something but we dknt care

Baba:Okay then what do we do, since we have to cancel this plan

Oh no fighting , but i don't have a clue as what we should do

Menzi:let's organise a sit down

We both look at him

Me:What !!??

I asked very alarmed is he insane that guy will kills us without thinking

Menzi:don't like he can't get to us if he wanted to too , he will and he can , it's a matter of time He finds us ,so we orgainse a sit down and ask to talk to her uts the only thing we can do without a war erupting and don't

be stupid to the fact that we are still adjusting to this place and he runs the damn city

Okay he has a point

Baba:that way we get to say what we want without the risk of getting killed i like that

Me:Okay I will organise a sit down ,I will personally go to him tonight

Menzi:Am coming with just in case

Me and my brother we're really close, we could've been close with Nokhanyo but she grew up to be a spoilt brat with no appreciation for our hard work while we slave away for the princess

Me:Okay lets go get ready we don't want the man to look down on us

We laughed and went to our separate rooms,i don't know how is this going to pan out but were going straight to his house that way we can maybe see her ,I want to see what she grew up to be ,see when we was staying with us I remember very vividly that I would always bathe her and do her hair , I loved her very much and i would always imagine what she looks like over the years but ways to a fail, I was only eleven when she left so seeing her all grown made me happy but what my dad's wants to do sickens me ,he didn't care but now that he is dying he wants her oh please it it was up to me we would ve let herblive her life I mean she looks happy , she is getting her education but hai not the selfish Khabazela he has too ruin but inserting

himself in her life mxm

I am done and my brushing my beard , am very proud of this beard don't judge me , then i wore my long coat , am wearing all black , that's the only colour i wear by the way ,I go down stairs and i swear I catching my mother in law of checking me out

Let me explain her , she married my dad last year ,I tell you when she found out he might be dying she was the one now pushing for the wedding of i forgot to tell you she is younger than me oh it gets worse she is the same age as my brother but hai there is nothing we can do they claim they love each other so hai there is nothing we can do about it , as for my love life its a disaster shame so let's forget it

Menzi:took you long enough

You would swear that we planned this but no ,we were dressed alike with some difference

Baba:make them talk to us okay make them curious ,I need this girl to come here

He says and we immediately take our leave,we get in the car and drive away

Menzi:do you think he will listen to us

Me:i don't know but it's worth a shot , I don't know if am happy that she is this well protected or annoyed

Menzi:it makes me happy that she is okay and lives a life that is fulfilling

Me and Menzi used to make all kind of stories about her just to feel her presence ,it breaks my heart that dad didnt have the love for her like he did with us , no one told him to cheat after all

Me:i know man ,I hope she is not a hot head like us

We bitterly chuckle, how sad is it that you don't know your sister personality

Menzi:not likely even Nokhanyo is a hot head in her own way anyway

The car goes silent , I think were both contemplating on how this evening is going to go , we arrive at his building around 18:00 and off the bet i can tell that one wrong move we are toast ,we get in and i see the body guard that has been with her all the time approach us, won't lie he is very intimidating but so am I so I won't him walk all over us

Him:what can I help you with and what the hell do want with her

FUCK he is Russian

Me:we just want to talk with your boss that's all were not here for trouble

I say with a straight face as Menzi walks over to my side ,he scans us for a while as if he is looking for something , then he puts his hand out

Menzi:what do you want men

Him:I know you're not stupid enough to come here unarmed so hand me your guns and pocket knives

Dammit he is good ,we have no choice but to oblige after that he makes a call

Him:the guys that have been tailing the Mrs are here.....they want to talk.....I don't know.....okay we will be right up be decent

He laughs ,okay i don't want that picture in my head

After that we follow him inside ,inches the pin then we go in ,in no time were in the elevator the next the elevator opens and we walk in

Ahhh there he is the mighty Anderson ,he made sure to make a name for himself and boy did he go with it

Mike:so this is them Marcus

Marcus :Yes,they say they want to talk

MIKE takes his shirt and wears it

Mike:make it quick my women will be here in a hour

So if she is not here why is Marcus

Me:we just want to talk nothing hostile at all

Mike:am here aren't I ?

Menzi: not to you, we want to talk with her

His expression changes completely

Me: please this is very important

I try to calm him down because he looks really pissed

He let us sit down and but he didn't sit

Mike: so what do you want with her, and please explain why the hell are you following her if you just want to "talk"

Shot

Menzi: we didn't know how to approach her okay, but again we didn't want to scare her that's why we came here

Nice save bro, he would blow us up if he knew we wanted to kidnap her

Me: just one meeting with her that's all we want

I say almost pleading

Him: Noso please leave

I don't want to beg but I have no choice

Me: Please men like I said one meeting

Mike: like I said

As he was speaking he was disturbed by the elevator door opening and she walked out my god she is so beautiful just like i remember,her hair is still curly in a afro like it used to be ,she has a killer body and abs
WOW

She walk in looking at us its like she is trying to make out who we are but just can't figure it out

Her:hi baby

She says still looking at us but looks at Mike and kisses him

Her:i didn't kniw we have geusts

Mike:they were just leaving my love

Her:don't end your meeting cause of meI will make myself and i told you I don't want your hooligans where we live you have a while warehouse for that

Marcus chuckles and she knows the life he leads OkayAm about to risk but why the hell not

Me:actually refile we were here to see you not him

She turns to look at me

Her:do i know you

I am avoiding eye contact with mike at all cost but I can feel his eyes piercing on me but I keep my stare at her

Me:Yes but you don't remember us but pleas meet with us tomorrow and things will make much more sense when i explain

Her:why can't you just explain now

She is sturbborn i can tell

Me:please tomorrow

She looks at Mike it's like she doesn't want to defy him because Mike looks pissed AF and i am almost certain that one day M going to pay for that

Me:please

I say and take out our stress in my pocket and out on the table

Menzi finally speaks

Menzi:this will help you connect the dots to your life

We stand and leave immediately

Before I walk in she sits on the kitchen counter and pulls Mike for a hug and they stay that way ,with that we take our leave with Marcus inside the elevator with us ,I hope she is curious enough to come through tomorrow

REFIWLE

My brain is still fried at the moment , I don't know what to think about those two guys visit , I swear it felt like i know them but I just couldn't make their faces

Am in Mike embrace and i keep in kissing his neck because his face is burried in my boobs ,trust Mike to find a way to make it my boobs

Him:are you going to go

Me:i don't know but I feel like i should go , i don't know am just confused about this while thing

Him:if you go am coming with and am not asking you I am telling you

He so overprotective but I love him for that

Me:i wouldn't have it otherwisedo you know who they are

Him:i have heard of the but they are from durban not sure what they want and so you know whatever operation they plan opening am going to shut it down ,this is my city

I laugh

Me:they are absolutely nothing to me so why should i care

Him:am just making sure you know

Me:i know baby i know

We left the kitchen took a shower together and went straight to bed ,we had no appetite at all Marcus can fend for himself just for one night

I hear him snoring but I couldn't sleep at all i couldn't even turn beacuse he was holding on to me so tight

Who are they and why do I feel so connected to them ,I just can't stop thinking about them at all and yes am going to them in the morning i don't think i can take it any longer the question are running through my head

Connct what dots to my life ,could they be family that I don't know about but I know that I need to know what the hell is going on and who the hell that are?

INTERRACIAL LOVE

BONUS INSERT

REFILWE

Jesus its finally morning and i am already up, I am sitting up waiting for Mike to wake up, I think he is awake he just doesn't want us to go but I feel very patient at this moment we are going and i want explanation

Okay now am not patient anymore , I start shaking his had that is wrapped around my thighs like am really running away *Lol*

Me:wake up Mike i know your not sleeping anymore
wake your was up

He laughs and groans lord Jesus this Men

Him:fine then

With that he throws me to his shoulder ,and we take a
shower ,and yes we had sex and of yiur judging me
screw you Okay i love my man

After our shower we do the whole shabam and
dammit we look good, we look like money

Oh he finally gave me my gifts and i have never seen so
many diamonds in my life and i appreciated them ,am
taking Kayla and Layla's advice, why not take this
lifestyle and Mike's affords it so why the hell not and
again I am goingnto school to work for my own future
and now Mike insists that whatever he does for me it's
out of love and so I have accepted that why fight it

Right now I have on a dark Maroon dress its a knee
high with a slit and it backless i let my afro loose i
opened a line on the side so it could be styled a bit ,my
cleavage was doing the most escpecially because my
diamond necklace was between my boobs okay hunny

Mike had on a maroon suit too with a black tie and
shirt and a black and white pocket square, did I
mention he was my men sies man we looked good , did
I also you know that I have stoped worrying abiutbthe
came thing am even embracing it now I post a lot on
my page ,after a few pics , we leave ,it's around 14:00 I

laugh because wow ,we woke up at 10:00

I am taking a few pictures in the car and post
#couplegoals

The drive is not that long and it looks like the family is
doing well for themselves i mean their house is huge
and its amazing i must say

We stop outside and he look at me ,I don't even realise
that am not breathing right now

Him:relax ,I have this house surrounded and am with
you

I just nodd

Him:do you have your gun with you

Oh yeah i have bought my first gun after i was approved
for a gun licence

Me:Yes it's in my gutter attached to my thong

He gulps

Him:don't make me horny baby not now

I can't help but laugh ,I gaze at him as he is busy
scanning the house,I just realise that I will kill someone
if they try to take him from me or they want to break
us up i mean it this time

Him:the boys are all set come lets go

We get out of the car,the guard opens for us without even asking questions,they must have been expecting us

Mike leads the way wuth my hand on his as he helps me up the stairs ,I love him ,I did mention that right

We stand at the door as we wait for them to open,because we just pushed the door bell,after a few minutes , a girl opens the door and smile

Her:oh you came ,sooner than I thought

I don't like her already ,we both just look at her serous as we can be

Her:oh come on in how rude of me

We go in Mike has his hand on my waist , the house looks amazing but it's not homey it's like a hotel,it reminds me of Mike's apartment ,well that shit changed , after we became official, there are pictures of us and candles and cushions its more homey now trust me

Her:Sit u will call the rest of the family

She leaves the room

Me:i don't like this , I think we should leave

He turns me to look at him and i do He still holding on to my waist

Him:let's hear what they want and if they waste our time i will kill them all

I laugh and lean to his chest

Me:do you think we should sit

Voice:of course you should , your finally home my baby

I don't know why but that voice scared me and I think i shivered that's why Mike's grip got tighter,they stand across from us and i see the two who were with us yesterday

One of them came forward and directs us to the lounge soon were all sitting down with juice in our hands , I can't exactly read Mike's face but dammit he is so sexy right now

Me:what am i doing here ,I came so please explain yourself

The guy that did most of the talking yesterday introduces them and i think i didn't hear the last part right what the FUCK does he mean their my family

Me:Excuse me what

Mike:Don't come with your bullshit , we don't have time for this what the hell do you mean your her family

Mr D:exactly that years ago your ELIAS kidnapped you and took you away from

Mike:what the fuck

Menzi:it's true ,we have been searching for you for years with no luck but we found you finally

He says smiling and i am in tears

Mike: i don't buy that shit at all , your rich its either you didn't look or yoh didn't care too fuck that shit , tell the truth or fuck off

The wife and daughter excused themselves

Then Menzi speaks

Menzi:it's all a lot to take in but yes it's true , he is your father, and were your brothers , we have been searching for you for so long that we almost gave up but we finally found you sisi

He says,I can't believe what i am hearing right now it's all but too much for me now ,how dare they accuse my father of such ill

Me:Mike baby please legs go

My voice is breaking

Mr D:please my daughter i need you ,I need you please

Okay that's it I stand up and so does Mike

Me:stay the hell away from me , i have a family , I don't

know who you are ,where the hell you come from so
stay away from or I swear I will kill all of you

I try to walk but Mike holds my hand and I stop

Him:come near her again I will break your limbs
myself .

With that we walk away then out,I feel myself shaking
and crying ,my knees are failing me , with that Mike
carries me to the car , he signals his boys something
and am sobbing

"Am your fafter , were your family " those word
keeping echoing in my head

If he is my father that means papa is not

With that thought I cry again why God i hope its not
true , because that would mean my life has been
nothing but a lie

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 29

REFILWE

My heart feels like is bee taken out and has been
stepped on and out back inside

I have been a crying mess since yesterday, were on our way to my dad's and honestly I don't think am ready for the truth, but Mike insists that j can take a story from people i don't know over my dad and he is right, that cabt come with their 2cents story and expect me to belive them , I have never hated someone without knowing them but I swear that Khabazela makes my bold boil , I just look at him and boy so I want to throw up

I am looking outside the window and this car is speeding like crazy

Him: you haven't eaten the whole day and you didn't eat last night please eat my love

Me: i can't stomach anything right now babe please met it be , I need to talk to my dad first , I need clarification this all so messed up

I say trying to contain myslef but my sob lets me down

Me: I just want to take a nap

He just brushed my lap and continues to drive

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Him: hey wake up were here

That Mike waking me up,my dad comes running and opens the gate and i hug him for dear life crying again

Papa:hao tsontso whats wrong my baby

Mike:hi pa how are you

Papa:am good so , what's wrong with her

Am still crying , I just could not stop it just hurt do much that my i thought about fresh tears would come out.

We walked in the house , my dad is holding in to me for dear life , my mother is no where to be seen and i really didnt care for some reason

We sat down , and drank water but I cried so much that I had hiccups now , mind you am still sobbing and can't really speak

Papa:son talk to me what's bothering my daughter like this

When she said daughter i couldn't help but let out a loud sob

Mike: a day a go we were invited by the Dlamini household they claimed they wanted to talk to fifi , they told us that their her real family and that you kidnapped her , pa is that true because none is making sense to her ,she knows no other family but you guys

I saw my father head lower down could this really be true

Me:papa please please tell me the truth am begging, they making it seem like you stole me please tell me that's not true

Papa:it's true my baby

What!!! Have you ever felt a stab in your heart ,have you ever felt so shattered that you can't really comprehend what's going on around you , curled up in the seat and burried my head in my knees still crying when i heard him explain

Him:it was years ago , when i went to Durban to look for a job times were tough so when i got a job as a garden boy the Dlamini household i thought why not i need the job and my family needs to ear, j worked for Khabazela that men thought the world revolved around him , he was a cheat and a loser i still belive he is , he had an affair with this young white lady that she worked i would hear them in the office doing it , when his wife was away , that resulted to her being pregnant with you , he didn't want anything to do with you He told her to get rid of it but she refused till she gave birth , then i heard she was murdered after giving birth to you , he brought you home and i thought maybe the man has a heart after all , your were raised my nannies and i would help sometimes because i had practise ka bontle,your brother adored you and your older brother would do your hair

I hear him but all I am thinking is my life , I was never good enough for my mother that explains a lot , why

she hated me and couldn't stand me , I have longed for a mothers love but she couldn't give it, thks explains it

Papa:one day k was walking past his office she i saw three scary men with him talking about a sale , he was going to sell you for 13million , he was ready to let you go when i heard that I lost it okay so at night I sneaked in and packed whatever it is that i could find, I stole money from his office took the bags and you and never looked back and belive my baby i would do it all over again without thinking twice

I think my tears a tired and so am I, I am looking at my dad , am I even supposed to stress him like that know ,I don't even how i got to the floor , so they lied to me they want my help but they lied to me

I think Mike was crying too but my dad is broken i couldn't help but sit on his lap and hug him , I love this man with everything that is in me that I cant even be angry or mad , I should be losing my shits now but I feel protected in his embrace his sob is dagger through my heart and i swear that Dlamini is going to pay

Papa:i know you hate me

No no no

Me:i could never hate you,am hurt am not yiur papa , am hurt that I was an extra burden to you,am hurt i was the cause you had to do things out of your character , I would never ever hate you,am still going to love you and take care of you , am going to build you that mansion you always wanted , there a lot i am going to do but hate you never

Mike:i was scared for moment I know hurt can make a person do and say a lot of things they don't mean

Me:i know , i know , I under stand why they had to lie to me , couldn't they be honest with me

Papa:am so sorry i should be able to protect you but I am failing

Me:you have never failed me so stop

I would him a bit tighter i need him to be strong for him even though i am breaking to a million pieces

Mike:i think you need to sleep its off pa , and don't stress about anything right now

Me:Yes papaplease stop crying

My dad agrees and finally disappears in his room , that's when i sink on the floor and let out the tears i have been suppressing, Mike carries me to him and let's me cry

Him:am not gonna let them do anything to you babe ,they are never going to hurt not again

Me:they have already hurt me , and if thinks am going to help with whatever he wants he sure as helm cabt got in hell for all I care

Him:i have to look further into this ,am so mad that i didn't uncover,I could have spared us a lot of heart

break

Me:either way baby my heart was still going to be shattered , how do you love me when am such a mess
Mike,am a lot and i come with a lot if drama

Here i go again thinking I don't deserve to be loved

Him:stop talking bullshit babe not this agian ,if i hear to you say that I again I swear

Me: am sorry am just hurt , it's a lot to take in

How do i deal with this oh it's just a lot and am just tired of all of this

I think i fell asleep in Mike's hands but ciuld still feel my tears come out

ZWELI

I don't like that we lied , but my dad insisted I told him his stupid idea would backfire and i was right , she is not stupid like his other daughter

Am at the club with my brother when i see a beauty at the bar ,I mean why not am hella stressed and i need this

I go and apoach her

Me:i will pay for that

Her:i can pay for my own drinks thank you very much

I extend my hand

Me:am zweli

She shakes my hand too

Her:Aphiwe

Me:your vey beautiful aphiwe wanna come sit with me
am right there

She looks and it's VIP

Her:my friends bailed anyway so why not

We got there and we talked danced ,I got her number ,
we danced some more , my bother was dancing in the
middle of two girls aphiwe was twearking on me and i
loved it

After midnight we were highly drank so I called my
driver to come pick us up

Her:i have to go , wow I can't feel my face

We laughed , i pulled her close to me and we kissed it
was sloppy but I blame the alcohol but it was good
sloppy

.
. .
. .
. .

.

.

Her:Jesus my head

Me:please sleep am too tired

Wait where am i , oh my room , I laugh to myslef am still with the lovely aphiwe , am looking at her and she is a beauty she looks a bit younger than me but indont really care am horny right now

Her:i thought my mind was playing tricks on me but no am not home am I

Me:no your not

She is very forward because i can tell her leg on top of mine and her hand busy trailing on my dick

Her:is this your place

Me:it's a family house ,we all live together

Her:how cozy

He let is now covering both my legs and within a second she is on too of me kissing me and i welcome the kiss as i cover her ass with both my hands , yes we slept naked

Me:where are you panties

Her:i didn't wear any

My bones got harder Yhuu ...she was grinding and teasing me , I did mention she was forward right

Her:should i stop

Is she crazy,I just shook my head I kissed went to my neck , then back to my mouth as I was rubbing her clit,she would occasionally moan while we were kissing ...I felt her hand on my dick and holy shit she put in her FUCK i love her , she was riding is me for dear and i was loving it

We both came and and she collapsed on me still inside me

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 30

MIKE

Were back on the road we have business to take care off, am glad my baby is so matured and didn't take her frustration out on her dad , I just got a text from brad and has all the Intel on on these bloody Dlamini's

I ask her to look at the my emails, her are are all puffy and red , I don't like that they have this much power to make her cry , but she has this glitch in her eye its

dangerous and it's sort of scaring me a bit , I don't want her to change her because of them

She goes through the email and i can see the horror on her face

Her:he had my mother killed Mike, he murdered and covered it up

Me:are you sure

I know it's stupid to ask

Her:i don't know what a mothers love feels like because he killed her for what, he could've just let her go and let her raise me alone, it's not like we would have needed him , I hate him so much and he is going to pay if that's the last thing I do on earth

She says and looks out the window , FUCK she has that look when she had just killed those two guys its sexy and scary at the same time , but i know it's haunted her for weeks and she is finally getting over it and they want to mess that up

Me:Baby talk to me

Her:it hurts too much to talk about it baby , I swear when i think about it a peice of my heart is breaks every time, I don't think i will get used to the fact that he is not my father

Me:he is your father don't let that change

Her:i see why she hated me me so much , why she

never acknowledged me , she found each and every chance to break me down , I was brought to her life and change all her life forced to take care of a child that was not hers

Me:but your dad loved you He still loves you with everything on in him

Her:i know that , did you have people look after my dad

Me:Yes he is surrounded ,inhale people watching and i didn't know your mom travels

Her:what are you talking about babe

Me:yeah she is in Miami you have to call her

Her:what's my mo...what's she doing in Miami,

I know why she left and i can't bear don't break her heart any further to be honest and i will be dealing with that mother of hers , at this moment my man in she state are transporting her back she will explain to me why the heck did she do that

Her:i didn't think i could love my dad anymore but I love him even more and the fact that I never felt anything but love from him just shows how great she is

She wiped her tear

Me:stop crying

Her:i can't

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

We arrived about an hour ago and she is going to the gym and i am tagging along

Me:don't break me please

She laughs and comes and hugs me

Her:i cant promise you that

Me:Baby no don't say things like that

It's nice too see her smile

Him:Okay baby lets go

We arrive in less than 20minutes the gym and we get off and then she goes to change am already wearing my gym gear, I place my hands the punching bag and hold my stance , and j sert punching that thing like my life depends on it , I didn't realise how mad i am that they made fifi cry ,I don't ever want to see her hurt like that ever , I carry on punching and kicking , after 10 mins i take a break and drink water and there she is stretching and warming up, I see why we have such a great sex lufe she is flexible , I know okay she is sexy i

can't help

After she wears her gloves and asks me if I want to spar with her

Me:hwyt the fight won't be fair am bigger than you

I say that to irritate her I knw very well that she is more skilled than I am

Her:come on don't be a baby she says

Me: fine then

We don't even bother entering the ring, she stands besides me wuth her hands under her chin ready to take me on ,I make sure my feet are well balanced i don't want to be knocked out with her first fist

.
. .
. .
. .

Me:I am never doing that her again

She stopped my ass and she can't stop laughing

Her:Okay Mr big shot

Me:Baby I let you win okay

Her:oh please

She stands and wears her gloves again

Me:you're not tired

I say catching my breath

She does a high kick on the punching bag and laughs

Her:am just getting started my love

Yhoo no am not get to get involved i just went to hit the showers

ZWELI

Yoh she is bad ass , am at the gym and my sister can box,no she kicks ass Menzi and I are amazed what she is doing

Me:man look at that

Him:you know we're the cause of all that anger

Me:yeah i know and worse we lied to her

Him:i think we should leave before she sees us ,I don't want to cause her any more heart ache than we have already

So we did leave and went home later today am meeting Aphiwe and her friends after our morning session there is no way am letting her go

Baba is going crazy because that little girl is not

leaving to her father the nerve

Menzi and i just went to change am picking up phiwe and her friend

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Her:thanks hunny for picking us up and you must be must be Menzi

Menzi:yeah nice to meet you

Her:this is my front tumi and my other friend is coming later on she is meeting us there

She came and sat on my lap while her friend, sat next to Menzi uncomfortably , we were in a Limo

We arrived at the club and went to the VIP and ordered and we were having champagne and snacks and they were dancing

Tumi:when is she coming though i havevebt seen her in ages

Phiwe:don't worry yourself tumi you know she has a man right

Me:who is this front of yours

Phiwe: on there she is ,he baby

She said waving and a beautiful women came to our direction

I can't believe that's Refilwe

Her: Hey my babi.....what the hell is this

Me: fifi please can we talk please

I say and am going to her

Fifi: Go to hell

Menzi: you can't just blow us off we really need you please

Phiwe: chommie whats this

Fifi: am out I can't handle this

She says and i run after and so does Menzi, we find her outside her fuming and pacing around mad as hell

Menzi: please sis

Her: don't call me that you have no to call me that no right no right

Me: can we please tell you the truth the whole

Her:my dad already told me , you made it seem like he did out of evil purposes while he was helping

Tears were now streaming down her beautiful face and that honeslty made me feel so bad

Her:you knew , you knew and still lied to me you lied ZWELI not considering my feelings at all

Me:He is dying

Her:i don't give a fuck , he can rot in hell for all I care

He black Lamborghini stoped in front of us and of course he called him

Mike:are you Okay

Her:let's go

She gets in the car and sits the

Mike:FUCK off Dlamini's,come close to her again I will kill you myself bloody shits

He gets in the car and speeds off

Menzi:am dine witj this shit ,dad can go to hell man

He walks away

I still have to try he might be an ass but I have to try to say he my dad after all

NEXT DAY

REFILWE

I don't know what am doing her but i need peace of mind , the hate and anger i feel is not good for me it's slowing turning into rage and that's the person i want to be if I am honest ,I am outside the door I lied to Mike said am going class i need to do this to myself , I know am safe because Marcus is around and Mike is stupid by now he knows am not at class

Ding dong , I immediatly regret pushing the bell ,I can't go bsck know so I breath in and out "i can do this I tell myself , am a strong was bitch " i try to convince

The door opens opens my rage has caused me not to see how good looking "MY BROTHERS "

Menzi :hey i didn't expect you or anybody am rumbling come on in

I walk in and i notice that its just the men in the house ,Good because i know i can't stand the women of this house

Zweli comes rushing to us

Zweli:my god what are you doing you looked pretty angry last night

Me:i want to know what you want from

I say with no emotion at all

Menzi:come sit with us

I sit and fold my arms all this time am looking him , the man that wanted me dead , killed my mother,then tried to sell me off , was i that much trouble for him

Mr D: am so glad you came back , God knows...

Me:cut the crap , don't you dare pretend as if you care when you know you don't,my dad told me EVERYTHING you didn't care , younger the means to find me all these years but you didn't so tell me what do you want

MrD: i have your medical records and i need a kidney you match none of my kids match but you am dying and your only one that can save

He sounded so robotic , I think that's why am not so hurt about it .

Me:i would never do that for you , I would never give a piece of myself knowing very well that you wanted me buried and forgotten ,you took so much from and yet you still want to take , it's seems like that's what your good at take ,take , take , when do you give huh ,don't call me , don't come over where I stay , don't even bother me with anything or i will kill faster than that kidney failure

I stood up

MrD:it doesn't change the fact that am your father i gave you life

Me:while that may be the case , nothing but a useless space of nothing and quite frankly am glad papa took when he did

Mr D:hey wena ntombazane you will respect me and talk with me accordingly

He stands in front of me and i stand up and it's almost like a face off

Me:oh what ,you touch me now and i bet you a bullet will go through your head right now , now sit back

He was huffing and puffing

I looked at Menzi and Zweli who were watching all of this

Me:am going call me for the funeral

I say and walk away , am I a bad person for wanting him dead and out of my life.

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 31

MIKE

I know where she went but I have people following her and they will alert me soon as something happens they will reportlike i said i don't want anyone hurting her

The elevator door opens and she walks in crying with her hands folded 7with tears flowing

I quickly rush to her as she sits on the lounge and she sobs ,I have to end this why do they have to do this to her ,she is always crying , it breaks my heart and i can't take it anymore

Her:he wants my kidney ,he doesn't want me , but wants my organ he doesnt he feel sorry , he doesn't regret what he did

Me:can't i just kill him already

She laughed through her tears

Her:Baby please don't be saying things like that , he is an ass but he is not worth our bullets

Like how she refers to things as our ,is it to soon too propose , we have been together for two months now

I sit next to her and she outs her head on my lap

Her:i don't know why i keep crying for him

Me:your not crying for him your crying for what he did too you

Her:life is so funny the one thing that I care about turns not to be mine

She chuckles

Her:i wonder what she looked like ,what's her name , do I have any of her features , what type of mother would've she been ,but then again I wouldn't have known papa, the love i get from him trumps that longing i have for her but it's hard to forget her

Me:Time baby , only time will heal and am also here for you my love

Her:and i will never forget the love yiur showing me now, some guys would 've bailed a long time ago

Me:am not some guy baby am your guy

I hear her soft snore after a few moment of silence ,I carry her and lay her onth bed and cover her with a fleece

Because I bathed i just change, I swear my black ripped jeans and a round neck shirt , with my black demin jacket , I go and brush my hear and once am done i call 5 of my men to meet me at the Dlamini residence which i provide the address too of course

I take my Mercedes car keys ,as quick as I can i have arrived and i see that my boys are also there , I take my gun load it and put it behind behind my back and of course my jacket is covering it , I tell them to take their guns , I need to make these shit heads listen , I call Marcus too make sure that fifi doesn't show up here

unexpected but he says she is still sleeping

They are all holding AK47's except for me , when we get to the front door i don't even bother to knock , I shoot the door lock a couple of times and and kick it open , I find the two brothers already pointing their guns at the door and my boys are of course ready

It seems like they were having dinner

Me:Oh family did I disturbe

The old men comes walking with the wide and daughter behind him

Mr D:what the hell do you want Anderson

I chuckle a bit

Me:it's simple and you know so am not tell you but if another tear drop on her face becuase of you am going to bust your hand open and decorate my man cave with it

Menzi:man please we don't mean...

Me:put your stupid gun down when you talk to me and who spoke to you

I take my gun out and walk to the old men and put my gun under his chin and make his short was look at me

Me:should've researched before coming her because my baby is protected you will never EVER get anything

from her , how dare you ask her off such

He doesnt give up

Mr D:because I gave her life and she should respect ,
regardless of the past

I chuckle the nerve of this man i don't know what
happend but I punched his stomach, Menzi and Zweli
tried coming forward but I have 5 men with big guns
why are they being stupid

He is on the floor

Wife:please sir please let him go

Me:shut up , and go put your clothes in your sons are
drooling over you

I say that well she looks young and i want to annoy her

She covers her breast with her hand and i look back at
him

Me:you lost it old hag, this is not Durban, I run these
streets so go die wherever yoh come from

I turn to walk away but stop

Me:you two your better than this shit , if what i have
uncovered about you leave this asshole had better your
lifewell you know what i mean

I say and walk out and my boys follow me out , i hope

he listens because next time I won't be so forgiving

BONTLE

I can't believe she now knows, am so ashamed that I didn't even call her but am also feeling guilty for not going to her, she might ask question and the progress have made wuth her will just vanish , it's still see her like my sister despite all the shit i did to her she still is

My bussines ongoing well very well its not hard to manage really just that am still learning a few things , just in has nothing been nothing but supportive he helps here and there and i appreciate him very much god knows i mean on him

Were in bed just talking about this and that when he mention a Fifi

Him:you know my brother says she is broken over this, I didn't like your sister because i thought she was just a gold digger , but they love each other those two

Me:i don't kniw how to face her babe , i mean how do i tell her i knew all along and that's why I treated her so badly

Him:a sorry would be a start , and tell her it was not your place to tell her

Me:she going to hate me , I have battled so hard for me to get over my shenanigans that all I want is to love her , but am scared am not ready for her to hate me all over again

Him:she is a reasonable person she will see reason

Me:you think so

Him:i know my love really talk to her babe

See what i mean i mean on him , the wild crazy just in has become a voice of reason annd yes i should go to him.

REFILWE

My eyes feel heavy but I wake up anyway ,I take a long shower and i use hot water and just let the soak me

I called my dad just to make sure he is okay and he assures me that he is okay

I open my laptop and just gather my books , I need to catch up .

After 2hours of studying Mike is still not home i wonder where he is but I trust my man he would never do anything to hurt me

I just remembered that I saw tumi and Aphiwe with Menzi and Zweli how do they even know them , ughhh am such a bad friend i didn't even explain to them why i just stormed off i have a lot to deal with so I will explain next

I go to the lounge and i find Marcus eating

Me:Okay Marc you sure can eat

He chuckles

Him:ey am a man fifi ,I have to feed myself since I haven't been fed on other departments

I just laugh

Me:oh men and sex

Him:and it's worse i live with a couple that have sex a lot

I laughed and spilled the juice i had in my mouth

Me:you hear us

He laughed to

Him:"oh my Mike , harder Mike, faster" it drives me crazy

He siad trying to mimic me but his Russian deep accent was failing him and it made me laugh more

Me:stop exaggerating Marcus ,I never say such things hao

Him:and the worse part of that I listen to the slaps and him groaningdammit not even ear plugs can help me

Me:wow , just wow I didn't think you were this dramatic Marc

Him:yeah well I blame you and your boyfriend

Speaking of boyfriend the elevator door opened,he went and fist bumped Marc and hugged me from behind

Mike:little family how you doing

Marc:were good man where have you been

Mike:sorting out bussines

He says kissing Mike as i see Marc lauging and shaking his head ,he knows very well what these kisses mean

I can't help but luagh to as I hold on to Mike's hands that are around me

Marc:God please help me ,am tired if your kids

I laugh more and i see that Mike is very confused

Mike:share the joke

Me:ha.a ask your men over there am not getting involved

I kiss him and ginto our room , I hear them speak

Marc:be slow men and quiet

Mike:with what

I hear Marc walk to his room

Marc:just wait for me to sleep

I then bust out laughing and throw myself on the bed,Jesus are we that loud

INTERRACIAL LOVE

One month later

NARRATED

Refilwe has decided to turn a blind eye to her "FATHER" and has been focusing on her studies , her relationships with the people that are close to her

Menzi rebeled against his family and joined Mike and his gang and he is slowly building a relationship with fifi , he has become an over protective brother, Zweli is to local for his own good so he can't seem to break away from his father much to Menzies annoyance "who the pussy now" that's what Menzi think when his brother says he has to take care of his father

Khabazela's condition has gotten worse he is not getting any matches and the dialysis seems to be losing its effect now because he said he is not doing it anymore,it's making him weak , that mans is going to be his downfall.

Bontle is working very hard to make her life a success and her relationship with her sister .

Mike has found Martha and boy he is ready on getting his hands in her lets just say he didn't take to kindly that she wanted fifi to be kidnapped , let's not pretend like Mike does not go insane when it comes to her ,he still cant belive how much of an effect a women has on him , sometimes at night he wakes up and kiss her just to make sure that she is still therefunny but true .

MIKE

Am on my way to the warehouse and my hands a itching and am not promising anything but am taking care of bussines tonight , I don't really like loose ends so I have to sort her out

Am not gonna tell anyone about this so because i don't know what type of reaction am going to get so am making sure that this doesn't fall back on me after i kill her ,yes am going to kill her , this women is not as innocent as she comes out to be , after looking more into her she has been talking to some kingdom wanting to marry off one of his daughter , I thought it was bontle but no the bitch was arranging my baby's mirrage , I have said she mine and mine alone so I don't get why she didn't stop after she knew she was in a relationship with me , oh hell she is gonna get it but I can't slit her throat like i want to because i want it too look like a shooting, I will explain later

I just arrived and am inside looking at my success,I really have worked hard for this shit threaten it your

dead i swear ,threaten the love of my life your double
dead

Guy:she is here

Me:is she tied down

Guy:yeas boss

I was about to walk away

Guy:boss thabo is making moves with some Brazilians
rumor has it that they want infiltrate your spots

Dammit that cripple won't give up , he after fifi beat
him done he was never regained his walking abilities

Me:keep me posted in that shit head and make sure I
know everything you hear

Guy:yes boss I will keep you updated

I proceeded to the room where Martha was at and she
looked petrified when i walked in

Me:it's good that your scared women

Her:oh please please let me go i will go away and you
will never see me again

Me:nah I want you dead and i will kill you

I took of my suit jacket and i was loading my gun she
was yanking herself fro the chair screaming

Me:there is no point in fighting ,you almost got my baby opened and gave a men that killed her mother and wanted her dead too her kidney forcefully, your busy arranging mirrage for her when clearly she has a men , you guys want money right ,it's all money for you right

Her:i had to survive

Me:by having her killed

Her:ohhh please please

Me:i don't trust you , and i don't like people i don't trust

I aimed at her chest and shot her 3 times , bang, bang , bang ,Jesus that felt good , she was clearly in pain and panting for air ,I took off my tie and strangled her with it , she was shaking and grappling but gave up and saw her life giving out on her

Me:serves you right.....Boys come in

They came in , their the one's that came with her from the state

Me:take this bag it has money in it ,and jewlary , I have orchestrated a break in , there going to be two men down including her , I paid the security gaurd to call the cops once my boys have done everything, put her in the mix make sure that her finger prints are all over that place j don't want shit coming back to me

I wore my jacket and fixed myself

Me: get people to clean this up

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Me: your so warm baby

She shifted closer to me

Her: where were you

Me: i had things to take care of

Her: Okay

She went back to sleep and heard her sweet little snore

MORNING

REFILWE

Me: Baby you wanna join us for breakfast

Am meeting bontle and Menzi for breakfast, we have trying to build a relationship and i must say it's great ,I low-key hope that Zweli would take much effort but he is not , and as for Nokhanyo she has made it clear that she wants nothing to do with me and i don't care at all , it's not like i know her right

I wore my my addidas tracksuit , with my fluffies and

just took my purse

Me:Baby am out

Him:i love you

He still sleepy from coming home last night serves him right

.
. .
. .
. .

I arrived at Starbucks and of course am early and they have not arrived i order a ice coffee and go through my emails

I feel warm hands hug me from behind only and that can only be Menzi,he so huge that he covers me up in a little ball and that always make me giggle

Him:ujan baby wam

Me:am good and you

He settles on a chair in front of me ,and i can't help but be happy that he went against his dad

Me:so why are you late

Him:hai no your always come early and blame us for being late yho

Me:you alyaws find justifications for being late ,I see

you

He laughs and orders a cappuccino and door on it

Me:tell me why don't you have a girlfriend, but then again I don't want to share your attention so it's okay

He laughs

Him:are girls are you much work sis ,have you seen how Mike is with you

I give him a look

Him:yah vele the man is whipped Yhoo mina ngeke shame

Me:yeah yeah whatever

Bontle walked to us and gave us both hugs and ordered a ice time

Her:i have a bussines

We both laugh because her excuse all the time

Me:am a starting to think you use that excuse to get out of sex sis

Her:what me say no to sex

Him:ugggh am setting to think your a horny bastard fifi everything relates when it comes to you

Me:well

They both about covering their ears causing me to laugh

Him:and anyway i don't know why you have a boyfriend your still a baby ,babywam

Her:oh there hi goes again

Him:i mean am definalty killing you if you fall pregnant and i want 20 million for yiur mobile

Me:bathong be jeso am not a bussines deal Menzi

Her:Ncooo are you broke menz

Him:bontle don't start your shit

Her:i can give you a job if you want too

I laugh because they are forced teasing each other these two

Him:mxm , where is your trust fund boyfriend

Her:at least i have a boyfriend,bet your handsgive you good pleasure right

I couldn't help but laugh out loud these two are hella crazy

Me:sis me and my friends are going out today,wanna come with but no boyfriends i made aphiwe promise

Him:can you atleast say hi to him sometimes

Me:pshhh why should , he wants nothing to do with me

Him:you know that's not true

Her:who died and made you his spokes person

Me:yah mmotse wena ausi

He points me with his straw

Him:this is nonsense you better learn Zulu wena

I just roll my eyes

Him:mxm i hope they fall out

I just laugh

Him:am coming too

Her:hee Menzi it's a girls thing hle

Him:u'khulumani wena when you just got invited

Her:all i know is that askfuni or whatever you say

Me:come babies

Them:mxm

We left and had breakfast at bagel shop and we walked around teasing and having fun with them , were not the conventional sibling but hey we make due where we can

.
. .
. .
. .

Me:babe but I said it's a girl

Him:Baby ka kopa tuu!!!

I just out laughing because the way he says it , my baby has been learning tswana,it's my favorite part of the day when we do

Him:so mara love please just this once okay

I guess I am not help that am wearing a black skinny jeans, lace body suit and my diamond choker with my Gucci sling bag and my thigh high LV boots, oh I figit to tell you I this morning i got 5million in my account i want to ask mike about it

Me:Baby no , no okay I havent seen the twins and my friends in a long time baby Okay

I say and kiss him and take my bag and run our before he can protest

.
. .
. .
. .

Kayla:oh my God i love the club

Were in the dance floor dancing the night away kayla has become a party freak especially after she broke up with her boyfriend

Oh and phiwe bailed on us ,it's not even shocking anymore she has made it a point to choose zweli over us all the time and we don't even care anymore

Tumi:i needed this

After shaking our butts like nobody's bussines We go back to the VIP area and just chill

Bee:i miss home

We sigh

Layla:does my brother give too you that good or old age is approaching, we all laugh

Tumi:well i can't relate coz girl is single AF

Me:yeah chommie you need to get laid shame

Kayla:i know a guy

Bee:what babe your also single

Kayla:please i always have dick on stand by

We all laugh

Layla:don't worry tee am also single i know the feels

Me:Mxm you guys have fingers use them please

They all look at us

Bee:we know you get everday all night

Me:what!!!

Tumi:we know and by the way very inconsiderate of
the poor man

I swearing Marcus

Layla:yes Marcus told us

Kayla:i can't belive you moan Mike and Jesus at the
same sentence wow girl

They laugh and i pout and fold my arms

Bee:"oh Mike , Jesus faster baby"*they say as they
mimic my voice *

Wow Marcus is a traitor shame lol

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 33

MIKE

To say i was bored is a understatement ,I needed my baby back here ,so I called my boys to meet me at the club , they agreed so u am on my way there

I always make it a point that I dress to impress i like standing out from the crowd its just my thing

I have on black jeans ,black polo neck with a necklace and and my 100k Rolex flashy i don't care i work hard for this

Am glad it's the weekend i can get drank however i want , I got to the VIP area and notice that Paul and Brad are here and they are with Bianca ,hope and Emily , Jesus help am just glad my girl is not here

Me:people

Them:hey /hi/hello

I say next to Bianca and Brad

Brad:we haven't seen you in a while bra

Me:been busy at the office and y'all know i don't honour like i used too

Paul:oh yeah you live in whipped Ville now

Me:whatever

The alcohol was filled on the table and it was fun well not great but fun but thing i don't like about our group is that they don't dance they all sit and act snobby and ughhhh

We should change the girls they date honestly

Hope:so Mike tell us are you still in love with your girl

Me:very much so , thanks for asking

A very beautiful girl walked to us and dammit she was hot not fifi hot just a distant second

Emily went to hit her and she joined us

Em:guys this is Nokhanyo she is a friend if mine

Us:hi

Me:do i know you know you from somewhere

Khanyo:i don't think so am very memorable, if you knew me you would remember me trust me

Oh sassy aren't we

Paul:well a pleasure sweetie

Hope:don't call her that

Me:hope baby stop its not cute

She actually brought a vibe to our table she forced Bianca and Emily to dance with us ,she was swaying her hips and made she we saw that

.
. .
. .

Me:Okay fine i will take her you guys are serious assholes for this

Khanyo:i will owe for this please

Em:Mike can you please stop and take her home

Me:fine getbin the car

She did and we drove away ,I was a bit tipsy but not that much i can hold my liquor quite well if I may say

Khanyo:your very good looking you know

Me:i know that

I removed her hand from my thigh

Her:why are you resisting i saw you looking at me ealier , don't worry i want you just as bad baby

Why am I getting horny my baby never deprives so why

Me:we got to where she directed me , and recognized the house

Me:i knew , I know you from somewhere

Her:yeah am a Dlamini boohoo but I know you like me

She stole a kiss and she got of the car She catwalked
inside her house

Okay I know i didn't cheat but why do j suddendly feel
guilty , dammit i should have left her geez

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

MORNING

Her:am so happy its Saturday,I get to chill with my
baby the whole day

Yeah I feel guilty that I was with a women but I didn't
cheat i would never do that to her

Me:yeaaaah about that

Her:babe you promised me that were having lazy day
today that's why I went out yesterday

Me:speaking off where did you go

Her:we changed clubs a lot last night ,we think we even

went to a strip club it was fun

Me:was Marcus with you the entire time

Her:oh that traitor in fact where is marcus

Okay that changed quick

"MARCUS" she yelled after a few moments he appeared in his boxers

Me:get dressed men

She pulled him back and held his hand , I don't like that at all

Her:am going to get you back

He chuckled and she said poking his brand chest

Him:that's want you get for being loud

Her:did you have to tell them Marc really Marc

I feel really left right now

Me:what are you talking about

She came and sat on my lap and wrapped her hands around me

Her:Mr over there tells people about our sex life ,the girls were all over my ass beacuse he told them how i moan when we do it

Him:hey

Me:and what's the problem atleast they know you get satisfied some of them don't have the same pleasure

Her:it's embrassing

She was now sulking

Me:you know what let's forget lazy day lets going to the mall , get you ready for the week ahead ,I need a haircut

Him:am going back to bed

My baby and I took a shower together even had a session and k know that annoyed Marcus, after that we decided to match outfits

We had on black jeans with white golf t-shirt and had matching rolexes my baby and i like to flex okay, she had on belanciagas sneakers and i had on my timberlands dammit we looked

We took my Lamborghini and drove off ,were not planning on shopping but we did we bought shoes , accessories,and clothes of course after long she complained of being hungry hungry , I think she is exaggerating a bit

We got to a restaurant and she ordered lobster with hot sauce i just went for sushi

Her:i need to get my hair done

I just laugh

Me:yeah am looking kinda horrible now

Her:i like your rough looks ,it's sexy but your right you need to cut and shave my love

We played footsies under the table , our food came and she made a face

Her:what the hell is that

Me:Baby uts the food we ordered

Her:it smells terrible

She called the waiter to take it back,she was already mad so we went to the salon , her sisters salon am just glad there is a barber just next to the salon i kissed her and we went our separate ways

REFILWE

Ughhh shopping is so tiring guys I can't,I just had my hair done , nothing really dramatic, I highlighted my hair , and brought my curls back to life and i must say i looked good .

Bee:you look good sis

Me:i know right i can't belive you have a salon

Her:babe you slay anyway

Me:it's not my money, I know he hates when j say that sis , but i want to hold my own i can't wait to do something with my life

Bee:patience sis patience you will see everything you want the career you want its going to flourish okay baby

She hugged ,boy am happy she stopped being a bitch

Mike walked in with all the shopping bags

Him:Baby you ready to go

Me:yes ,I am ready come lets go

.
. .

Me:ugggh baby stop being clingy baby please

Him:Baby what's wrong why don't you want me to touch

Me:just don't please

Mxm did he listen he pulled me closer and i wrapped my legs with his

Him:that's more like it my love

BONTLE

why is my phone ringing bathong

Justin has been nagging me to answer the phone but it is so far

He groans when it rings again ,I drag my feet and i go to the counter and answer

Me:what.....Yes this is she.....excuse me whatno no

My phone fell tonthe ground , Justin came running to me

Him:Baby what is it

Me:my.....my mom.....isshe is dead

Thats what the last thing I said before i passed out

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 34

NARRATED

The day of the funeral had passed bontle was distraught but fifi made sure that she was there for her sister even thought it was hard for her to cry she just

couldn't the women based to much hater to her to even she d a tear for her , Menzi was also with them , him going to the funeral got him closer to the girls which is what he wants , he says now that he is in fifi life he feels complete

Mike opted not to go to the funeral and before fifi left they had a fight ,Mike couldn't understand why fifi is occasionally snapping at him and she doesn't want him to touch her sometimes , it was not cheating because he has people following her all the time , fifi always constantly snapping at her caused him to go out everynught found comfort in alcohol but he has also found comfort at the hat's of Nokhanyo who had made her mission to seduce Mike and slowly but surely its working

Lets just check on the other shall we

Lucy is now 3months pregnant and she is still hiding the pregnancy from her family , she has been taking money to save up , Antonio has been trying to convince her not to tell anyone just up and leave but she knows very well that Mike will find her so she should atleast tell her son that she is leaving and help her and the boyfriend with a new identity

Well Mr Anderson senior doesn't even notice the changes in the house, because he is still scheming against his so with thabo *laugh *They sure my don't give up do they , they actually think Mike doesn't see them coming but okay we will see , he has also been having different girls so he doesn't see the need of his wife, hence he doesn't notice that she is pregnant.

Khabazela situation is at least finding a light ,Zweli traveled Japan when a hospital they have been communicating with said they have a match for him , he traveled with a qualified doctor to handle everything , he has promised himself that thus is the last thing he us ever doing for , can you believe he demanded him to go didn't even ask, even at his death bed he is condescending asshole

NOKHANYO

It was hard getting Mike's attention when i started this whole thing but Emily has been helping me get too him , I met her at the store saud she likes my style and we have been friends ever since , she i found out that she knew Mike it was just a bonus

I don't really care that he has a women whobjust happens to be my sister or so they say i just don't, that men reeks money and he is so sexy that when i see him I is always wet.

I don't know what that stupid girl did but I have been having moments with him more , last nufmght we shared our first kiss and he figured me in the car , it was not his dick but god it was amazing .

Emily just picked me up were going to a private resturant just chill as a group , she tells me Mike booked the enire resturant for just to relax and that already had me excited

Em:you look all smiley whats going on

Hope:yes spill we always tell you want you want to

know

I looked at them

Me:Mike and i kissed

They screamed

Me:he also fingered me

They screamed

Me:hey watch the road Em we dknt want to die

Em:i just can't belive he kissed you , donuts not all today in their relationship

Bianca:so it seems , I just can't believe she thought Mike would be here alone

We all laugh

Me:how ridiculous is that anyway I don't care about that , I just hope tonight he is going to be inside me

The thought alone is driving me crazy and i can't wait

Hope:just becareful okay that girl has a hold over Mike he snaps whenever someone talks bad about her

Em:ugghhhh stop it hope going on and on about her

Hope:just stating facts here girl

Me :well shut up

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

It has been so amazing tonight we had dinner just us and were drinking and i am on Mike's lap ,we having been kissing her and there and it's glorious honestly , i can't wait don't to Milan just for shopping , don't get me wrong daddy is rich but he is o stingy somtimes it annoys me

Paul: i see when the Mrs is not around Mike will play

Mike: Paul please shut up

Brad: what are you doing men?

They don't like me very much do They pshhh i don't care

Em:let him have his fun guys , I mean he has been so uptight lately

Bianca : and he was hardly ever with us , let him let loose and relax he deserves it

Brad:your so stupid sometimes i wonder what am I doing with you

Me: can you not ruin a good night please , come on man

Mike:yeah lets end this night before I kick somebody

ass

Paul:No oh please man like you would

Bianca:where us just in and why is he never and i mean never with us anymore

Hope:heard he has a girlfriend and they live together

Em:it's like the Anderson brother has made it their mission to pick up girls from the street and put them in their

Mike:Emily get the fuck out

Em:but

Mike:get out before I drag you out myself

Okay seems like hope was not joking because lol bye bye Emily

The mood was ruined so we decided to cut it short after his goodbyes we drove off

Me:are you always this silent

Him:do you always talk this much

Me:your so bloody its sexy

He chuckled and kept on driving in no time time we were parking in this beautiful building, and were getting inside an elevator, and we walk in this beautiful

apartment

Me:yours

Him:yes , I will be back

He disappeared to somewhere is i got ready , took of my dress and put it aside and i was left wuth my thong and lace bra it just screams eat me and i hope he takes bait

He appears back from wherever

Him:you know i don't think i should have...

Me:like what you see

He is drooling , god he is such a men

Him:get yourself here

I did what i was told

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

We had sex on the couches , bed , floor , wall everywhere we had sex and am burning up , am really mad he insisted on condoms but hey i still got fucked by Anderson and it was good

I hate that he does not show affection after sex , I need

cuddles but no he is snoring away so I take to myself to make him cuddle me then I dozed off.

REFILWE

I couldn't stay behind any longer and pretend like I cared or anything lol I can't believe she was now robbing stores wow , besides I have school tomorrow and I have been feeling sick , the only thing that broke my heart is that my dad actually loved her, he is too good for her even in death

We left at 00: 00 I wanted to rest and have a relaxed Sunday with my man , I have so bitchy and dismissive to him I don't know why but the smallest thing irritate me now and Jesus food tastes so bad now yhoo he.e

Marcus was the one driving me and Menzi,bontle had to stay behind and just in is so nice he stayed with her

Me:ahhh thank god your here

Menzi:i can't wait to sleep

We chuckle

Me:Marc please take him home and you can take a day off from .

Marc:is it okay if I don't come come back

Me:yeah it's cool and bro I will call you later

Menzi:Okay Baby wam I really need to sleep now

Me:bye

I got off and took my bag and they drove away and i went inside the elevator and the motion made me feel a bit nauseous so soon as the door open I ran to our bathroom and puked, ughhh have i ever mentioned that I hate puking

I rinsed my mouth and and brushed my teeth ,I was about to walk out our room , when i noticed there are two people in the bed

Why is mike breaking my heart?

I didn't make noise,I didn't even let myself cry because i knew very well that I was going to lose my mind if I did

I went to the lunge and took off my shoes , this When I notice their clothes all over the floor , I am fuming with anger I swear am going to bust

I took off my coat and i sat on the couch hugged my legs and buried head on my knees and sat on that position

After a few minutes i heard footsteps approaching the lounge area and a bit of groaning , normally that sends chills through my spine but now it's disgusting me

Him:FUCK my head

I don't think he noticed me , so i decided to make my presence known

Me:was i not enough for Mike

I heard him run up to

Him:Baby am so sorry , am so sorry shit

Me:2 days Mike I was gone 2 days and you couldn't keep to yourself , one fight your alresdy done

Him:please look at me

Me:you make me sick

I let my face out and stood up wore my shoes again and tried walking away but he held my arm

Me:let go of me

Okay I think now my tears are betraying me because i can feel them burning

Voice:couldn't you atleast wake me up

I turned and when i saw her they just fell and i hit Mike with my bag

Me:with her are you fucking kidding me Mike with her , you cheat on me with this

She looked like she didn't even care..... will make her care watch me as I lose my shit

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 35

MIKE

A moment of weakness could fuck my life really badly , she is so stoic i can't even read her emeoion which usually i can but not today , I slept with another women who just happens to be the daughter of her father, how mire stupid a man can get Jesus I fucked up.

Nokhanyo tried to leave a few minutes ago but fifi slapped her so hard she fell to the ground i tried helping her but she dared me to and i know better than to dare her

She has changed into her gym wear and nohknsyo is still crying from having being slapped

Me:babe please met me explains

Her:what is there to explain and fucken babe me fuck you Mike FUCK YOU

Khanyo:please let me go please

Her:bitch speak one more time , I promise you I will tears are your face , I promise , don't test me , get your ass up

She sits still on the floor ,what the heck is she doing

Her:GET UP NOKHANYO

She stands up and sits on one of the chairs , I can't believe how emotionless she is ,cabt she atleast cry or yell or shiut something , injury need something to show me at least she cares or something , I don't recognise my baby when she so like this , I don't even think i have the right to call her that

Her:i told you Mike, you have that power to break , weren't you sure , huh did you want to see what would happen if you tried well there you go and am going to show how much you have broken

She goes to the elevator system and locks it after she ties her hair into a bun it is not as neat as it usually is

Me:babe please can she go so we can talk

Her:oh she can go but after I am done with her am going to teach her to close her legs , I am yiur sister after right baby

She is losing her mind ,I get up and walk to her ,she is in the kitchen, I try to hold her but she pushed me away

Her: don't touch me you feel sex and cheap perfume

Khanyo:you kniw what fuck you, who the hell do you think you are

She says as she is walking to the kitchen charging at fifi

And she continues

Khanyo: Mike made his choice clearly your not as good as you think you are because he went to look for something better outside and guess what nunu that someone is me

Fifi chuckled and took the knife she was holding, she pushed Nokhanyo to the get her banging her head a d the knife on her throat

She was shaking in fear

Her:repeat what you said , not so much of a loud talker now are we , I knew you are a bitch the moment I saw you just didn't know you were cheap too

The knife as made a cut a bit and am scared she might kill her , and i really don't want a in my apartment *am so stupid *

She took the mixture she was busy and ripped my shirt that Nokhanyo is wearing and she actually rubbed whatever it was on her Vagina *did i say she was crazy because wow* her screams filled the room whatever it is its burning her up but fifi went for another round and rubbed her butt crack too

Okay now am shit scared I don't even have the power to stop how , her stoic expression disappeared i see nothing but hurt and anger , yeah no that's not anger its rage

She pulled Nokhanyo by her her and unlocked the elevator door and kicked her , with no clothes on just

her bra and panty , no phone , and she made sure she left with nothing and i mean nothing , SAVAGE i say

The elevator door closed and just when i thought she was about to come and ouch me or hit me no she didn't instead her tears flowed and she rushed to our room , that's still a mess from last night sex escapades with Nokhanyo

Me:open the door babe,so we can talk please baby please

She was silent but I could hear her movement in the room

Me:please I can explain.

With that I heard loud sob and my own tears were flowing

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Her: don't call me don't look for and don't you ever make yourself present in my life, I love you so much but you have way to much power to hurt me like you just did I just can't allow it

She came a bit closer and pecked me lips

Her: i will never forget you but I hope you do

She took out her hand from the elevator and it closed ,

why did I do myself like this , our fight was not even that big but no i had to go and go back to my old self , I slid down on the wall and just fired for a bit ,I couldn't help myself

"Stay away from me " she must have lost her mind , call me selfish but I can't am not letting her go

"Don't look for me" I can already see where she is going with the tracker in her phone, like i said am not letting her go

I messed up I know but god knows how much i love her and simply letting her go just like that ,I wouldn't be me if I did that , and my love her consumes me way much to just listen to what she said , forgive me for being selfish but hell no she is mine

ZWELI

My father's operation is scheduled for next well and after that am done with him , I actually do want to build a relationship with my sister and get to know her , Menzi is forever happy now that she knows her , he refuses to tell me what they get up to she they meet "you know where to find her " He always says

I have decided to go into the hotel business wise ,I just bought shares to this hotel , since Anderson is shutting us down when it comes to the underground and i am in the works of opening another office this side while my cousin will be running office in Durban

Like I said am buying hotel shares ,i just left another successful meeting and i managed to bag another shares

good huh

I was about to walk out the door when a bumped into someone

Her:watch where your going nxa

I couldn't be furious because her voice sounded like she was breaking i turned to look and it was fifi in tears

Me:he hey come here

I pulled her to me and toom her big bag

Me:are you okay sthadwasam

She shook her passed to go to the reception

Her:hi can I book a room for 2 weeks please

Lady:oh yeas are you playing cash or ...

Her:i would like to swipe please

She did her business and she was given her key room card opner i took her bag form her and she didnt even protest

.
. .
. .

Me:tell me what happened why are you crying

She hasn't been able to say anythingbecause she is busy

crying

Her:he cheated Zweli,it get a it hurts so much

She says and new tears flow

Her:you know what hurts with most is that he knew what that would do to me , he knew that he would tear me apart if he did that to me and yet he does it and then claims to love , if love hurts so much then I don't want it shame yoh no how bathong

I just pulled her for a hug , am going to beat Mike's was for this I swear

After a few moments she out her head on my lap night he water works would not stop

Her:teach yiur sister to close her legs , what i did to her now was nothing and am no where near done with her

What the hell is he talking about

Me:dis he cheat with Nokhanyo

I enquire and she nods

Her:she knew what she was doing , who she was going after

Me:FUCK

I couldn't even defend her because she is right and i don't want to upset her did her

NARRATED

After Zweli left Fifi in her room sleeping, she called Menzi and they went to Mike's office and beat him up, he didn't even fight them because he knew why they were doing what they were doing, she felt like no greater pain will pass the one he feels for hurting her like he did

When they got home, they found Nokhanyo trying to nurse herself but Menzi was too furious to care because he whipped her with a belt and until she fainted from crying, to bad daddy wasn't there to help her, because that's all she was screaming when she was given a hiding on her ass.

Fifi is broken and she can't even comprehend how is she going to live without Mike because he has become such a big part of her life, but for her sanity and sense of worth she did what was best for her, she will always love Mike, but she can't even see a future with him anymore

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 36

REFILWE

Well I have managed to drive all my friends away, I tired shutting my siblings out but they wouldn't let me

and am grateful that I didn't shame because i feel so lonely in this big hotel room

Yes I have been at the hotel for 2 months now, am gaining weight like no body's bussiness because i have been cutting off gym , but i need my life back , but how do i do that when my heart is still at his apartment ,he sends money and clothes every chance he gets and because i have no income i had my take the ,my dad visted me for a weekend , he said he wanted to make sure that I am okay , I pretended like i was fine but to be honest i still cry behind closed doors when i eat my nutmeg ice cream it has become my favariot thing in this world shame and my siblings try but it's not the same

And guess what i saw Nokhanyo and the bitches , I don't kniw why but I feel like they planned this , but yet again no one forced him to put his dick inside of her ,whenever I force myself to forget about it I just can't and i hobour a little hate for him is it stupid that I still love him so much, yah neh matters of the heart are really complicated

Am meeting Menzi and Zweli for a late lunch date and because i just wrote my last exam paper , why the hell not

Mr Dlamini got his kidney and they are waiting to see how his body responds, I still hope he does because if not am going to do it myself , I hate that men with all my being .

Marc still drives me around, I said I will let him drive if we don't speak about Mike and everything that is

connected to him .

Were in the car and i can smell is scent ,I can't help but smile to myslef

Me:Marc have you moved out yet,any ladies

Him:please i tried dating but ladies in south Africa love money wow

I just laugh

Me:because your going find them at the wrong place
Marc

Him:maybe i should go to conventions , the grocery store , maybe even a book shop

"Book shop" that's where I met the love of my life

Me:Yeah you try that Marcus maybe you will find that

He drips me off and i tell him that he can leave because Menzi said he will be taking me back,I haven't seen them in a week and Zweli said no more of that shit , he scarce me sometime lol.

I walk in and notice that bontle and just in are with them,it still shocks me that they are still togther

Me:hi guys

Them:Hey/hi/hello

Zweli:your late sthadwa why are you always late

Me:because am depressed and fat

Zweli:hai were tired if your blackmail

Jay:jah you can't always be late

Me:my depression is caused by your siblings, so don't

I say down, that's how blackmail them all the time

They all laugh and i lazy sit down

Menzi:yiur even gaining weight

Bee:but your glowing its not fair how you don't even
lose your figure

Jay:Baby go to gym you will get the same results

We all laugh

Zweli:wena am going to beat your ass for always hiding
in that room of yours

I roll my eyes

Zweli:do that one more time

It takes everything me not to roll them again

Bee:yoh Zweli yiur such a pian

Menzi:hai bontle une ndoda so shut up

Zweli:and wena what's your problem why are you ignoring your friends

Me:oh please zwe now that she is tired of you hovering her she remembers me

Menzi:Baby sis don't be like that

Ughhh they are so annoying hai you

Bee:it's true though Zweli she always cancelled on us and i mean even all the ones she planned

Menzi raises his hands in defeat

Jay:have you called Mike yet

We all look at him

Jay:oh come on he misses you, he looks terrible

Me:Jay baby I don't care he brought this to himself,I didn't ask him to cheat

Bee: don't act like you miss him

Zweli:stop pressuring her , and i hope you never go back to him , he made you cry i didn't take to kindly to that

Yey he fumes when we talk about Mike

Our food came and we were eating,I was just forcing myself because Zwe and Menzi kept on eyeing me

Shut i have to puke, not this again , not again , I rush to the toilet and quick am in the stall and like my brains out,I seriously hate puking no man

I stand up and just rinse my mouth and as I walk out dammit there he is sitting down , why did he lie he looks so good ,how could I still love him , the urge i have to run to him is so hard to suppress it but I know i should , he looks so good and i not only look horrible but I feel terrible , ughhh this is too much am leaving this so much I thought I hated him but no i don't , I hate that I do

I hurry to the table grab my bag but Zweli holds my hand

Zweli:sit down and finish your lunch

I don't protest

Menzi:why are you crying

I didn't notice that I was so I wipe them quick

Jay:you need to heal not for him but for you he don't deserve it not at all

Bee:you will be fine baby sis

I chuckle , I know i won't be fine not when am not with him , it's stupid i one it is but I actually tried going on a date but I kept on seeing Mike's face i left after he

odered hake shut smelled bad okay

Menzi:snap out of it

Me:please shut and leave me alone

Shit shit

Me:am sorry bhuti by i really have to go

I took my bag and stormed out I made sure bit to make eye contact with him at all

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

I stood there and used and requested using uber black app

I opened the door but someone shut it close

Me:if you don't leave me the fuck alone i will fuck you up

I say as am turning and i am met with his strong scent in front of me why why am i crying i don't him to see me crying please stop falling hle bathong bamodimo

He pulled me in for a hug , why am i not fighting him , I can't i just much his ass and walk away instead my feet and body, Heart and soul are betraying because they

yearn for him ,hai jehovah

Him:Baby am so sorry

I look at him and Jesus he is crying too

But why yho , he has such a hold on me

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 37

REFILWE

I can't believe am in this apartment again , and to be honest i have missed emotions, I want to jump him and kiss him but I know better than to do that

Him:you look so beautiful baby

Me:please don't call me that

sniff

Him:how long will it take for you to forgive me I miss you so much

Okay now he is crying to make me feel guilty

Him:i gave your space but I need you back i want you back

Me:Okay really now don't act like you didn't reap my heart out and stomp on it

He sighs and kneels in front of me , I don't know why but hands brush his head

Him:am so empty without you , you were so distant and pushing me away that and when you left i don't know I just lost my senses I lost it more but am more lost without you ,I haven't bathed in 5 days, and today i had to drag myslef for a meeting baby please please come back to me

Me:i can't.....I want to but

He looked up and kissed me , mxm wa bora o he knows i won't pull back

Instead i wrapped my hands around his neck ,and he hled on to my ass

Ughhh am so weak when it comes to him , the kiss was so sensual and sultry and because i was horny and that I wanted Him,but the love i have for him won't let me sleep with we have to talk first

I pushed him away

Him:i know baby ,I know

Me:can we talk , like really we need to talk

He wiped his tears and mine

Me:you know i love you with everything in me that what you did it it broke me so much , I didn't even notice that I was pushing you away ,baby you should have something

Oh dumb head why did I say baby , I mentally rolled my

Him:i don't know why i didn't,I just know that you didn't want me and it hurt me , well that's what i thought

Me: i don't know what's happening with me okay ,I lash out at people ,I push people away lately and i don't am easily agitated,uts been like that since your cheating

He flinched

Me:but I love you so much I really don't know what to do i really don't

Him:move back home first , the rest we will take it step by step , I won't rush you, I won't pressure you ,but please my love come back my baby

Me:i will come back

He smashed his lips onto mine

Me:Baby what happend to no rushing me

He laughed and out his face between my thighs

Okay no shit am horny hle bathong

Me:but I have demands Mike, am not stupid

He raised his head from my laps

Him:what are the demands that you are talking about
anything i will do

Me:i still don't trust you, so no sex , until i am
emotionally ready , I don't want to live here anymore I
mean you fucked another girl here let me clarify my
half sister ,and i want therapy we love each but that is
not enough hence therapy okay

Him:Baby therapy though

Me:do you want me back or not

He sighed so heavily

Me:so

I raised my eyebrows

Him:Okay fine babe I will go to therapy

Me:and were not sharing a bed

Okay please say no to that one please please

Him:hell no , I missed cuddling you

I just remembered i had something to tell him

Me:the clothes that you have been getting me are a bit to tight ,I think i have to go a size up

He pulled to the floor and he raised my shirt and was busy feeling on my stomach

Me:what are you doing

Him:am trying to see something be quite

Mxm he can be such an ass sometimes ,a ass that I love , ahhh am all up in my emotions these days

Him:babe

Me :huh

Him:your tits are bigger, your moody, I heard you are sick don't ask me how i know , and you have wider hips ,are you pregnant

what!!???

I couldn't answer him because i don't know honeslty ,I have been crying that I didn't notice these changes that have happened on my body

He was caressing my boobs and i pushed his hands away

Me: am not sleeping her so please bhuti am leaving

Him:can i come with

Me: no, find us a pl.....

Nope i have the best idea , he is going to wish he didn't mess with me by cheating on me , I don't think he will learn if I let hi be just like that .

Me:you know what love ,my baby you can come with

He looked a but shocked ,oh he will be shocked all right

Him:oh thanks babe

Mxm i love him ,but I have to release my stress on him first

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

He looks like he is catching his rest in a long time but ke am about to rain on his parade

It's around 23:30 and he is fast asleep ,I think he actually has a smile on his face ,am glad these hotel rooms are sound proof

Am holding his Dior leather belt that I just soaked in hot water and lucky for me he decided to sleep naked

I slowly take if the blanket on top of him and i meat sure I beat that ass in half and he jumped out of bed

Him:BABY WHAT THE FUCK

me:did you really think i was gonna let you just get away with it huh do really think i am just gonna let you be just like that

I let the belt fly over and it hit his chest as he was about to run away I hopped on the bed and covered him ,

Him:FUCK IT BABY STOP

me:Ntshwere wena me tlo fa mmao (touch me and i will give you your mother)

I whipped his legs , all over his body he tried to hide but a while his back ,he tried covering his back and i whipped his ass again,boy am I glad he is naked oh and my baby was red *white people problem lol*

He is hardcore AF because he is not crying but he is in so much pain its funny AF i had to hold in my laughs yoh

I dropped the belt on the floor and he looked at me pissed as hell , and on top of that he is still sleepy

Him:Baby what was that ,fuck that hurt

I waljed closed to him and crushed his balls and he closed his eyes grunting in pian

Him:b...Shi....fu....why baby fuck fifi

Me:let that little thing of your go in another pussy but mine , I will break it in half

After 2 minutes or wÃ s it more lol I let go if him and pecked his lips and webt inside the cover and snuggled up, I hesrd the bathroom door open , after 15 mintes I felt him pull me closer to him

Me: sleep

I need him sigh so heavily almost exaggerating i know him

Him:did you have to say little thing

I laughed so hard , and the fave he made didn't help at all ,yoh am and their penises i can't deal shame

I wanted to wrap up the last insert and am tired yoh

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 38

MIKE

My body is still so sore , imagine a whole cartel leader is beat down by his women , but am happy i was with her , and she called Johnny little that irritated me

Am at work this moment but am not working, I have a real estate agent looking for a house for us , I mean why not we should be staring to be a home ,before my

mistake i was talking to his dad about proposing but now I am back to square one because the shit i caused , I can't believe I almost lost my women, lol am joking of me she left me no man was ever going to have her , yes selfish who gives a fuck

Me: i need it to have atleast 8 bedrooms and they should all ensuites please, everyroom should be big and spacious

Her:well i just might have a house ,for you actually someone cancelled their sale because the house was to expensive

Me:send me the house pictures and everything and i want a viewing , but please have options for us , somewhere around sandton , northcliff i don't want to be that far from my offices

Her:Okay thank you sir it will be a pleasure doing bussines with you

She walked out and i sent fifi the pictures of our potential house

Speaking of my baby I have been observing her , but she has all the signs of a pregnant women , she pukes,has gained weight, her stomach is a harder than normal i know this because i was playing with it , and when i was playing with her nipples last night she said am hurting her , she is definalty pregnant , Now her dad is going to hate me more , she says am crazy she is not pregnant but I saw my mom during pregnancy and i know she is.

Speaking of my mom i haven't seen Lucy in a while and that is so bad of me , I have to go check on her , I have been so caught up with my life that I didn't even notice that am neglecting my family ,I should have dinner with them i should call my baby to let know

Phone call

Her:hello

Okay no more baby or love sigh

Me:Baby

Her:are you okay , Mike I told you am not pregnant

See alresdy fighting lol

Me:i was not talking about that and yes you are i know , am having dinner with my family tonight wanna join

She chuckled

Me:no thank babe I will gladly pass

Me: Okay my love and tomorrow were going to the doctors office

Her:but....

Me:no buts we are going and am not asking

Her:uggghh i hate it so much when your bossy

Me:don't lie you know i turn you on when am bossy
,you said yourself

Her:Okay fine , I have to go babe

Me: i love you okay baby

Her:i know you love me and i love you too

We hanged up ,how could I sleep with another women
am such a idiot

Me:Okay by I love you

Her:i know you love me and i love you too

We hanged up I don't know why i cheated on her she
such an amazing women

.
. .
.

Me:Kayla what do you mean she is gone

Kayl:she said she was tired if dad's bullshit and she
packed and left

Layla:weird thing is dad didnt care he just let her go
when we told him ,I am tired if this family

Me:and why didn't anyone care to tell me this

Kayla:*laughs* what would have to done you were so
depressed and crying over your girl, you idiot I can't

belive you cheated

Layla:i hope she leaves your stupid ass

Me:well sucks to be you she is back and were buying s
house togther

They both laughed

Layla: i knew she would she was way to sad and she
loveseat too much

Kayla:you do that to her one more time , were are all
going to beat you up

Me:oh really

Layla:yeah we almost lost a friend because of you

Me:yeah i know,I know

They are right that I almost lost a gem because of I
don't know because of what really .

REFILWE

Am scared to even think that I am pregnant , my dad
will freak out, my sister will be happy , my brothers are
definalty going to kill me

I can feel the changes in my body , now that Mike and i
see in better terms and am not wallowing the whole
day

I am meeting Aphiwe and Tumi for lunch , I had to do a lot of begging for them to come ,

Me:Marc your so quite today

Him:just a little stress , the boss has me doing a lot these days .

He really did look tired , I should learn how drive maybe i will take some of his work load off I know Mike has him do ither things

We arrived and he drove off and i went to wimpy where am meeting the girls and luckily it not they have already arrived

I sat down

Me:hey girls

Them:.....

Okay it seems like am going to have to work a lot harder than i thought

Me:am sorry I ditched you guys i was gojng through some things and i don't know I pushed everyone away Mike cheated on me with another girl am so sorry

I wiped my tears , Jesus am such an emotional wreck these days

Phiwe:did you say Mike cheated

Tumi:oh hell no oh baby am sorry , there I thought you were mad aphiwe is dating your brother and i thought that was selfish of you

I don't like that they are dating but whom is me to say anything so I just don't

Phiwe:oh were sorry my baby

Me:no man am the sorry one j should have spoken to you guys but nawe aphiwe stop putting your boyfriend first all the time

Phiwe:oh yeah the twins and Tumi gave me a earful about that one am sorry chommie

Me:we have to do better at this friendship thing huh

Just then Nokhanyo and Emily walked in and sat on a table opposite to us the nerve

Our food came and I ordered 2 ribs and a Greek salad with a large soda

Tumi:wow no more diet

Me:am starving,I had a workout session with mike last night

I made sure they hear me bitches need to know, they both looked so surprised

My girls and were just talking and catching up , aphiwe was talking how she is falling in love with Zweli and

Tumi sulking about being single ,it was fun shame after our lunch i asked Marc to come pick us up and he said he was on the way

We stood up but okay Nokhanyo had to open her little pie mouth

Khanyo:you know i can still take him from he only feels bad he cheated

I turned back and put both my hands on their table and sank to her face

Me:seduce him again I dare you to , the chili i put in your Vagina will feel like ice when i melt it closed

And I turned to Emily

Me:I wanted you , you didn't listen from now on every little single thing that happens to your family its your fault

my girls and I walked away ,I like being a boss bitch it's so liberating shame

UNKNOWN PLACE

NARRATED

Mr Dlamini , Anderson and thabo are all working together to take down Mike ,they all want a peice of what he has and they want to take hi down and it's going to take a lot since he has eyes everywhere but why not hit his biggest weakness

They all now that he will do anything to save fifi so why not take her , why not hit him where it hurts most will they succeed seeing that fifi can hold her own , but their stupid man ego does not allow them to see that fifi can kick their butts .

APHIWE

Am do happy i have my frinds back , I just thought that she hated me for dating his brother but now I have a problem my boyfriend,no man not Zweli,before i had this blesser that did everything for me he but now am so in love with Zweli that am scared he will find out and leave me he can't I have to ask fifi to help me she seems to have a knack for these types things problem is she might hate me for this whole thing

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 39

NOKHANYO

As you probably know by now Emily is the one that helped get with mike , God our night togther was magical, until that witch ruined it for us everything was great until she showed up , when she put that chili mixture in my Vagina i swear I thought I was losing it , it burned do much that I had to go to the doctor for treatment .

Am at Emily's house in her room and she is nervius as hell why the hell is she scared of that bitch really

Me:stop pacing around Emily your giving me a headache

Em:did you not hear what she said , that girl is insane you don't know her like i do

Me:what could she do , she is just a bitch living of ,of a men really she is no threat

She chuckles nervously

Em:she killed two men that were supposed to kill her she killed them by herself

I swallowed hard but then again this is good

Me:are you that stupid we can have her arrested and why is she not arrested

Em:ciyse there is no evidence because Mike's her man , are you really stupid

Me:don't insult me Emily and what do you mean there is no evidence because Mike's her boyfriend

She laughed

Em:i don't have time to explain to you, the girl has a lot of power to destroy my reputation and your here thinking about dick

Me:don't annoy me tuu started this shit now finish , I want Mike like you promised me

Em:well get over it ,Mike would never go for a stupid bimbo like you please save yourself to whatever abomination of a men your going to get and forget Mike like i said he will never be yours

This bitch , I swear am going to kick her butt

Me:what the hell is wrong with

Em:your not even that beautiful thank God for make up you failed bow leave my house before I throw you out

Me:FUCK you Emily and i bet you am going to get Mike , we will see where yiur little smile will be when i get him bitch

I stormed out I can't belive she pretended to be my friend huh

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

I just got home and won't you look at that my brothers are home for a change

Me:well it's nice to see that you still live here

Zweli:khuluma ngani manje wena

Me:no it's just that your never home these days

Menzi:we work you know

Me:please you spend do much time with yiur precious fifi that I think you forgot that I am also your sister

Zweli:weee look who is taking didn't you say were to going to hang out with you and we are just getting to know out sister , unlike you we are not seducing people's partners

I looked down

Menzi:you better stop that nonsense wena Nokhanyo have you seen refilwe's training she will break you skinny bone i tell you

Zweli:what are you doing with your life vele wena huh,what are you doing besides shopping and being annoying

Me:mxm i don't have time for yiur stupidity

Zweli:what did you say khanyo i will beat your ass if you forgot that were older than you

Shit i bowed my head

Me:am sorry bhuti

Menzi:you better be nxa

I ran upstairs,I have to find a way to get Mike back

there is no way am letting him go him but then again we do know this stupid stupid refilwe meaning that my brothers will always look out for her too .

I know i will find a way ,no matter how long it takes he will be mind

Mr Anderson

I have tried getting my son back on my side and failed, I tired planning his downfall but he beat me to my game this time i want him arested , after he signs everything he owns he will he dead , now that whore that he calls his mother has run of with another men,I will get to her after I am done him

Some of you might think its a bit harsh seeing that he is my son but this is my punishment for disobeying me , I made him and there for he should respect me and this time ,I think we just might can because it's seems like he has a lot of people upset and we all have come togther to take him down ,too can't believe how powerful he has become

Thabo has become obsessed with taking him down and his girlfriend he is wheelchair boys but the boy is still resourceful, he has got us weapons that keeps the men that guard us loaded meaning we are safe for now, I just hope he doesn't find out just before we can alert the officials abiut his ways

Mr Dlamini is just a butter bastard , he hates his daughter for not donating her kidney and that he can establish himself in joburg because Mike is all over the damn place , we don't trust each other but we all have a

common enemy that is my son , he acts like he is god
but he is not and i will show him

Me: so what do you think we strip him of everything he
has and i mean everything and then get him to jail

Thabo:i would work he won't be able to get to us in
prison for stealing all of his Shit

Mr D: you guys are slow we have to get him to prison
that takeover

Me:how would we do that if all of his assets would be
frozen

Mr D: Okay now I see , take all of his Shit then get him
arrested but then how do we start

Thabo:well i have been fucking his PA she said she will
slip some documents in his pile of documents ,he is a
busy men he won't suspect shit

Mr D: your a cripple that fucks hot ladies respect man

We chuckle

Thabo:well a little bit of charm and money can make
girls do anything

We laughed

Us:TO TAKING DOWN MIKE

We cheered and planned further my son might be

smart but can he really outsmart 3 minds i think not .

.

.

.

.

.

.

Say whatever you say but all that damn money he makes will be mine even if I have to kill him to get it ,call greed , I call it well whatever i call.

REFILWE

Me:Baby I am not pregnant

Him:were still going to the doctor, we have to be sure

I low-key think that I am pregnant but then again I can feel my body has changed , I am scared to find out the truth honestly

We just arrived at the doctors office , this fool is happy and busy rubbing my belly

Me:stop that babe your making me nervous

Him:ahh i can't wait to have little princes in my hands

Dr: miss refilwe

We both stood up and went inside and say down

Dr:so how can I help

Him:she is pregnant but is denying it

The doctor laugh as i stared at him

Dr:Okay go and per on this and we will determine of your pregnant or not

I did my bussines on the bathroom when i came back i give him the stick that I peed k and we had to wait,I was pacing around the office and Mike had the biggest smile on his face

After a few moments

Dr:well we about to have a mini someone

Fuck fuck

Him:as baby I told you

He came and hugged me and kissed me all over my face ,am happy but am so scared

Dr:Okay come sit on this bed

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Me: i can't believe I am 3months pregnant

He was hugging me so hard and i was a bit teary

Him:well i can believe it do you know how much sex we had

Me:almost too much , and am so horny now

I said between tears and that amused him

Him: am always available

Me: but baby am still mad at you

Yes still crying ahhh fuck hormones

Him:i know my love you but what are you going to do

Me:can i rape you instead

He laughed so hard and am busy crying lol I hate pregnancy hlong.

Him:i would still enjoy

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

We are cuddling in bed

Me:we have to get a house soon ,we have to get the nursery ready and i want security at max please

Him:am going to do everything and more

Me: and i want cameras all over that place am not

taking any chances

Him:yeah and some idiots think they are gonna get me arrested

He laughed and i got worried immediately

Me: what do you mean

Him:well our father's and thabo haven't learned shit at all ,I want thabo dead and the father's in prison am going to turn them into bitches in that prison

Me:Baby what are you talking about

Him:watch why i run this city baby just watch

Oh hell am not ready for this honestly ,I just found out we are about to be parents now this bullshit and am still going to get back Emily

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 40

MIKE

I don't know why people keep trying i don't know, but am glad I placed Sean and thabang when i did I always have Intel on those fools,my own dad wants me in

prison i didnt realise that he would go this far

Well whatever information i get I do everything to peice my plan togther and it's coming slowly but surely when i strike back they are going to wish that they didn't come for me like that but it's going to take time.

I can't believe am going to be a father , my baby is 3months pregnant, this makes so much sense and i can't believe I cheated on her while pregnant .

Am in my office with my brother he looks happy I can't belive he is all grown up and in a serious relationship

Me:well your father is at it again

Jay:no man he is doing to much now , why can't he rest and give up , it's not like be doesn't benefit from all the bussines

Me:you know i don't think he took to kindly the success that boomed after he stepped down

Jay:am just glad am never broke and i can take care of the Mrs.....dude can you believe she is actually running a bussines

Me:yeah man she surprised a whole lot of us

And we decided not to tell anyone were expecting until we have our new home , then we can tell him and we want to bring her father over, he needs to be the one that knows first

Jay:yeah man ,I think i fall for her everday and she is a

beast in bed

We laughed

Me: you will never change always thinking about sex

He raised his eyebrow at me

Jay:don't be talking shit men you out off all people
shouldn't be talking

I laughed

Me: my reason is that my women is not so I look at her i
get a boner immediately

We laughed again

Jay:i know what you mean dude

We continued talking about this and that and i was
actually able to work even though he was here

A phone call came through and it was Sean

Phone call

Me:yes

Sean:boss

Me:do have something for me

Sean:yeah , we were doing our rounds today and we

heard thabo and your dad speaking about your PA we don't know what but something about signing a contract that will be you handing your assets to them

Me:what the fuck are you sure

Sean: am positive because i saw her just now leaving with a brown envelopeboss your P.A is sleeping with the enemy

I banged the table with fist leaving justin a but lost

Me:job boys you know what i will send you guys bonuses you have been doing a good job lately

Sean:i have to go they are calling a meeting I will brief you after

Me:Okay be careful man

Sean:will do

He hanged up

Jay:what was that about

Me: i have never hit a women before and i don't want to but this peice of shit is testing me

Jay: what are you taking about men stop speaking in riddle

Me:my personal assistant how could she.....but i can't do anything that will tip off the old men that I know

about their planfuck what am I going to do

I said brushing my fingers in hair

Jay:i know

I looked at him

Jay: make a fake contract they want your shit instead
take theirs they will regret messing with you

Me:so I replace their contract with mine stating that I
take everything and when they sign they won't even
notice because they won't suspect a thing , I will make a
replica of their cover page

Jay: exactly bro

Me:at least you gave a brain after all

He laughed and we fist bumped

Me: i think i should go homeI mean the hotel

Jay:she still won't go to the apartment

Me:no am thinking of selling

Jay:or you can let your favorite brother live in it

I mean why not though he has shown maturity

Me:you know what you can move in just after we pack
our clothes

Jay:wait are you serious

Me:yeah the Mrs will sure appreciate the upgrade

Jay:she sure will

Me:oh and please get Thato to draft me the contract i will be sending you all the points if the the things I need to be included in it

Jay: no problemo

He stood and we both went our separate ways .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

I just to the hotel and to be honest i hate the fact that we have to live here good thing is that we have 3 houses to view tomorrow i hope fifi like one of them because wow I hate that we live here and the media has been up my ass as to why we moved here , am glad they didn't notice when she moved out otherwise my cheating ways would be plastered all over the news

Were snuggling in bed and yes you geussed it no sex , she refuses and funny thing is she is horny AF but I am never going to pressure her not when i was the one that messed up

I am rubbing her tummy god its so flat i don't think that

you can notice that she is pregnant unless you know her body like i do

Her: i hope these houses are not ridiculous babe

Me:they are in the northcliff and others are in sandton and i swear baby I am getting maximum security

Her:i hope so am pregnant I don't want any drama please my love

Me:Baby I need yihr help and it's not actually legal

She turned to look at me

Her:what do you need

Me:my assistant is fucking with our money baby

I told her everything and what i wanted her to do and she didnt even protest

Her:they are messing with my baby's future so there is no where in hell am letting her go come to think if if I should start with my plan to sort Emily out

Me:what are you talking about

Her:oh my baby am just getting even that's all , I will deal with my darling sister after this

Me:Okay baby I think am scared of you know

She chuckled on got on top of me and the she kissed my

neck

Her:you should be

She got off the bed and went to the bathroom

She is so sexy and i see that she is teasing .

REFILWE

I did say Emily should watch her back right,I just called one of the biggest media houses and told them I had a scope for them , I sent out Emily nude photo out to them

She is a media influencer and her image is her everything so of course it's going to make rounds after

This is face one of my plan and i am happy with that so far its going to create enough damage for so long , I did warn them didn't I , I live being pregnant it has somehow made me fearless

I went back to bed and snuggled up to my man

.
. .
. .
. .

Me:i like this one no I love it

We have been viewing houses for the last 2 hours and i like the last one , it's too big but am drawn to it and i love it

Him:are you sure babe I thought you liked the 1st one

Me:i said like , I love this one ,it's big yes but it's homey and welcoming you won't understand my love

He just nodded and went to speak to the realtor and i was admiring the house,

Geez by next week i want this house,furniture and done i have to tell my family that am pregnant especially my dad

I hope my brothers and dad don't kill me

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 41

APHIWE

Am meeting Zweli for breakfast today and to be honest am happy with him , he is a bit tough and rude sometimes but i love him and i hope he loves me too , reason I say this is because i have said I loved and he would just kiss me .

I just arrived at McDonald's and he is not here yet so I just order tea and sit down .

I was looking at an Instagram feed and someone's name

is all over wow there's a nude photo of her , mxm
whoever did this to her i don't care she has been
pulling a number on my friend .

Him:hey beautiful

He packs my lips and then sits down

Me:hey sthadwasam how are you

Him:am good

And already his cuppicino is brought to the table and
we place out order for breakfast

Him:phiwe you know i don't like game angithi baby

Me:yeah i know that babe

Okay why am i sweating now

Him:so tell me who is that gut that visited you last night

Okayis it hot in here, my blessed paid me a visit last
night ,I tried breaking up with him but he point blank
said no and honeslty right now I think Zweli might just
kill me ,he said if I cheat he is going to deal with me ,
only god knows what he might by that

Me:be...zwe....what are you talking about

Him:wee aphiwe please don't try me baby , answer the
damn question ,khuluma phela do so

Me:Baby I swear I tried to leave him , but he doesn't want to i have been trying to break up with him but he....he

Him:he he what

Me:he won't let me baby please am sorry

He looked at shook his head .

Our breakfast came and I had to hide my tears because wow he was eating care free min ke i couldn't bare food i was shit scared

Me:Zweli

Him:oh am Zweli no

Me:no I meant to say baby...

He chuckles

Him:Don't make me slap the sense back to you ,and eat your damn food

Yho the calmness in his voice scared me

Me:okay

We ate in complete silence it was so tense you could cut the tension with a knife

After about 15 minutes I was still eating and he was done just staring at him I was scared of one particular

question

Him:ever since we started seeing each other ,I have slept with him

Oh there you goshit am so fucked

Me:one time

I was still looking at my plate

Him:look at me

Nope i am not doing

Him:Aphiwe i said look at me

He hanged the table and people looked at us ,I had no choice but to look at him

Him:who is he where does he live and lastly go home when i get from where I come i want to find you there

Me:what are you doing with his....

Me:maybe younthought i was asking you I was telling baby now give it

Shit okay now am scared

Him:do you want me to get old waiting

Okay it no was not dead shit i would laugh he has a dry sense of humiyt and i sometimes love

I took out a pen and paper and write him the adress

Him: i better find you at your flat , uyang'jwaela wena

He stood up and left am in deep shit

.

.

.

.

.

.

I called fifi and she came immediately see why i love her

Fifi:Baby you did what

Tumi:i told her she is going to get busted

I was pacing around the flat

Me:your not helping here yaz

Fifi came and hugged and i laid my head on her chest

Fifi:he won't do anything to you okay baby if he does I will kick his ass baby

Me: i was so scared you would be so mad

Tumi:it's your life hunnay

Fifi: am just disappointed but then I hope you learned

The door busts open and he looked furious

ZWELI

I beat the shit out that guy and what annoys me he has a wife and kids .

I didn't even knock when i got to her flat and my sister was hugging her , she thinks she is smart lo

Me:Aphiwe

I heard her sniff

Me:stop crying its not going to work so please save your tears baby

Sis:please go cool down Zwe i don't need you huffing and puffing mo kopa o tsamaye

Tumi:yeah am off to my room am not getting involved in this

See smart girl

Me:do so wena

Fifi:am not going Zweli

Eish i hate how stubborn she is sometimes to make it worse aphiwe is hanging to her

I sat down

Me: if I see any idiot with you again , my sister won't be here to save your ass

Phiwe:Baby i said I was sorry njena

Me:hai futsek wena

Fifi:ha.a Zweli mind your language tuu!!!

Mxm i stood up and left ,I called my brother to hang out but he said he was busy him and Mike are working on some deal,yaz maybe I should have joined them but my man ego got the better of me ,but am glad I have my own stuff that I deal with hotels bring in money shame

.

I just went home cause if I go to the club am going to fuck a random girl.

.

.

.

.

.

When I got home i found my sister with two girls i didn't know

Me:hello

Them:Hey

Khanyo:hey bro ,this is hope and Bianca

Me:ladies,khanyo you will find me in my room if you need anything

Her:Okay

I went to my room and just laid on top of the bed ,I don't want any other men touching her ever again

EMILY

i can't believe she released the picture my phone is blowing up my dad cut me off he said I embarrassed him and i should fend for myself now since I how around he froze all of mg cards and my savings won't be able to maintain me , my friends are avoiding me , that picture is ruining me

Just this morning my agent called me dropping me he said he doesn't want to be associated with attention seekers , my PR team also dropped , they said my they don't want to be associated with me , she did warn me right

I have cried till i can't no more ,I don't know how to deal with this situation i really can't what makes it worse is that i have been blowing whatever money i had on clothes and going out knowing very well that my dad is going to give me money now that is also out the window because he cut me off , my mom doesn't even wabt to look at me

I really have to get my shit together and come up with a plan soon or all will be forgotten about Emily.

2 days later

MR DLAMINI

Yes the men is fine now ,and i know oh yiur such a bad men,oh how could you,well i don't care o am who i Am,and yes i am married to a 25 year old she gives to me good and i give her money so why the fuck not

The contract that we sent that girl just came back and the fool signed each and very page wuth his initials

So well all sign because we actually shared all of his assets among us,the contract is now official and sealed the girl is with us sitting on his crippled mans lap,were having whiskey

We give that girl a copy that has to return to his boss

Me:make sure you give to him on Monday we will be coming to tell him the big news

Her:I sure will

MrA:i can't wait to se his face now that his ass is poor

Thabo:i told him that one day were going to get him one day

Me:why do you hate him so much I heard he paid you good money

Thabo:that women he has was mine and he took her

I was shocked so that girl really is a floozy and she wants me to acknowledge her never I don't have whores as kids my daughter does not sleep around he

knows i have money to take care of her

Me: i am not shocked ,she will regret ever leaving you

Thabo:yeah

MrA: Too riches gentlemen

We all cheered and the girl left

Me:i can't wait to see his face when we kick him out of the office

Thabo:that's going to be the best part calling security on him .

Me:after we work to get him to jail

MrA: he won't get us when he is locked up

Thabo:true ,uts nice doing bussines with you fellas

Mr A: go rest fellas

We decided that thabo should keep the contract because Anderson and i don't want to risk our children seeing that contract

We will see how that refilwe will survive with a poor men who is going to be a convict soon lol life is good man

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 42

BONTLE

We moved to the apartment today and God I love it ,the view to the city is just amazing , I was standing in the balcony just taking in life as it is ,I am so grateful that I managed to get midlife in check other wise all the things I have now I would've not had them

I feel just hands on my waist and my heart still skips a bit when he touches me ,I always shiver, yes he has that effect on me and i always appreciate how god is good to me hle

Him:am glad you love it

Me: i do baby I really do , but i think we should change some things and definalty change the bed

He laughed and kissed my neck

Him: we will use the guest room god nows that bed has seen it all

We laugh again

Me:Baby, thank you babe thank you so much .

I say kissing his arm

Him:no thank you babe , you know I changed , I can't believe my aim was to play you

Me: i slept with you within moments of meeting you ,and i didn't think we would be anything honestly

Him:yeah I know is baby , but i love you so much

Me: i love you too babe

I pulled him to the guest bedroom and yes we had our first apartment sex

God is good though ,my life is nothing i thought it would be ,my mom is no more but I gained my sister and i am happy that I stopped being a bitch towards her because yeses ke happy man ,I mean yeses i am within moghel o tsene hle.

ZWELI

Am at aphiwe's flat and she has been taking a shower since i got her ,I think she is avoiding me

I am in her bedroom and i decided to take my clothes off and i am left with just my boxer ,well i hope she didn't think that she is going to go unpunished

She comes in her room wrapped in a towel her hair is wet and i can see the water dripples on her body and my god she is so sexy , she stoped at the door just looking at me

Her:b....baby are you okay

Me:yeah i am fine ,I was just hot

I say and lay on her bed

Me: are you going somewhere

Her:him...yes I was but I can always cancel

Me: cancel

Her:o.okay...okay babe

Me:why do you sound scared aphiwe what have i done too you

Me:lutho babe it's just that...

I cut her off

Me: get here now Please

She came and sat next to me

Me:get on top of me aphiwe are you slow

She got on top of me and smiled to herself

Her:Zweli are you always to rude kodwa baby you know we can't have sex here i have a roommate

Yhuu u'zonya stong shame i am horny and i need her

Me:hai kodwa baby

Her:don't kodwa me Zweli we need to respect her she respects me and so do I

Okay am not gonna win la by am not giving in

Me:Baby i won't be rough like i am somtimes i will be slowly baby please hle i want you

she ran and closed the door and locked it

Her:i swear if you get how you get am going to bite your dick off

She dropped her towel and got on top of me and started grinding on me ,I got hard immediatly I held her ass and she was taking off my boxer and she made it her business to invite me inside her

When I was inside all we talked about went out the air because i was thrusting in her fast and i went all in , because she didn't want to he loud she buried her face in my neck and moaned silently i felt sorry for her because she was trying so hard and i to had to suppress my groaning but I loved the sound of my balls slapping her ass

After 20 mins of her riding me and me thrusting in and out of her she had her orgasm and i followed after it was good I tell you

She slap my chest

Her:you don't listen wena better hope she didn't hear that

I laughed and kissed her forehead

Me:Am sorry I just lose it when i am inside you , you know that moss don't act all surprised, and phiwe if I find out you had any other men that is not me am going to kill you

And I am not joking ,I don't like sharing and i never will

MIKE

Well I know They are on their way at this moment, and apparently that are coming guns blazing with confidence,I got my copy from my PA and these fools did sign my contract, can you belive that I own all their assets i mean everything,bussines ,cars , house and well I don't give a fuck it will teach them to stay in their fucken lanes

This me teaching them that you can't swim with big sharks while your a mere fish , I just paid for my baby and i house and i have an interior designer working on it as we speak , I want out of that hotel ASAP, this mess is god g to take care of all people that matter to me and my baby's life the rest can rot in hell for all I care for .

I am sipping on my cognac and smoking my cigar while am facing the window my i heard the door opens roughly without a knock or anything

I chuckle to myslef and sip on my drink

Me:how can I help and why the fuck didn't you knock

I say still looking outside the window but now am leaning a bit on the wall just because i can

Thabo: i told you your numbers of glory are numbered wena jack ass

Dad:son don't make this difficult

Mr D:if you that in OUR company maybe we won't call security on you

Why not have fun with this a bit

I drop my cigar and glass dramatically and turn to them looking worried and they laugh mxm these idiots

Me:wh.....want are you talking about

My personal assistant is the one pushing thanks wheelchair how romantic

Dad:this company is our now , you signed all your billions to us were rich and your left with nothing

Me:dad don't be spiteful please..Please i worked hard and you know

Thabo:i want this thing out if my site NOW

MrD:well you heard him

I look at my dad and then these two ,I am waiting for them to see that am acting but no just to show that my

dad knows zero fuck about me

Thabo: Get the fuck out Mike

I go to my side table and pour myself another glass and sit at the table and let out a loud laugh enough to leave them confused and shocked AF.

Me: MIKE ANDERSON strikes again

I say as I gulp down all the contents of my glass

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 43

MIKE

I mean how stupid and dumb can 3 full grown men be, they are street smart and school smart but I guess greed and anger are bitches

I stopped laughing and folded my arms, as I leaned on my table

Me: am not going anywhere gentlemen, see I hate men like you, the type that just want to take over, who the hell do you think you are, and do you even know who Am I?

Dad: well son I knew this would be tough on you but we

want to start with the take over its would be nice if you left without a fight

Mr D: like we said we don't want to call security on you , and maybe we might throw in a million just to sustain you

Thabo:he is not getting anything i want him out and out now

Oh wow listen to this little rat

Me:Gentlemen , gentlemen ,are you stupid,you think i didn't see you coming from a mile away , I did say i run this city didn't i

Their smirks turned into frowns real quick

Me:yeah am sure I did say i run it , now let's look at this predicament shall we

I folded my arms and scanned their facial expression one by one and i knew very well that they were shitting themselves

Dad:MIKE GET THE FUCK OUT

Me:oh patience Dylan i think you will under stand once am through now Please sit *chuckles* yiur already sitting courtesy of my beautiful baby

I laughed just then Justin walked in and have me the contract and he sat on my chair looking digueted when he was glancing at our father

Me:I SAID SIT THE FUCK DOWN

i roared while having the table , but i quickly composed myself

They sat

Me:Good

Okay am not that nice someone is leaving here dead

Me:see if you fools read you would see that j changed this contract completely instead of me giving you my monies you gave me yours, I mean your cars , property , investments EVERYTHING

that's when they started paying through their contract

Me:I have a copy and everything , see one thing you underestimated the power i had huh, I mean am not God but hell i come close to that ...and you

I pointed at my receptionist

She came and kneeled in fotn of me crying

Her:b... boss ...boss....ple..... sorry oh god they forced me please

Me:Get off your feet and leave never come back

Her:but

Me:GET OUT

That made everyone jump and she really ran out after I leaned on my table after taking off my Jesery

MrD:Anderson WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT

Me:are you stupid , what am saying is that your company in Durban is MINE, please move out my house by the end of this week and leave MY cars in the garage, see how i keep on emphasising on my mine, that's because you tired to take wants mine ,you broke down my baby and you took her mother from her , so please get the fuck and know that I am always on your ass ,don't even touch that money on yiur offshore accounts because it's also mine , you can keep the one in you bank account your going to need now GET OUT

MrD:what the hell how am I supposed to live

Me:i don't give a flying fuck man just get out and if see you smelling anywhere near my girl I swear wil blow your brains out myself

He stood up looking defeated and walked to the door and turned to look at me , with pleading eyes but like i said i don't care about him

I then turned to my dad the one who hurt me the most

Dad:son....son am your father , you can't do the same to me

Jay:now you remeber your a father , dad Mike done everything for us and i mean EVERYTHING what do

you , you turn and spit on her because you want more ,
what the hell is wrong with you

Me:your noting to me now , I will take care of my
sisters , I will look out for mom because you failed her ,
I will be that man that you failed to be , I froze every
single account , I have packed your clothes, there is a
car downstairs will all your belonging , GO ,
RUN,before I change my mind and kill you

Dad:SON

Me:GET OUT DYLAN

He got startled and stood up he looked at me teary,
mhm he can go fuck himself

I have a drugs in that car that are worth 3.5million
packed up in the boot ,I also notified my contact in the
saps ,I told him to make up fake charges too i want him
to rot in jail

He left and i was left with Thabo he has nothing to give
so he will pay with his life because i have warned him
countless times , my baby even crippled him but no the
ass does not listen

I put my hands behind my back and took out my gun
that was already cocked

Thabo:b.....

I shot him three times on the head ,heart and stomach

Jay:what the hell man what if people heard

Me:office is sound proof.

I wore my jacket and opened for the boys used the basement area and then they cleaned everything that has transpired , we also used the basement to leave , I told him to take the body to the location that fifi sent me I am not sure what she is going to do ,but she told me to deliver the gun i used .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Jay:so it's done

Me:yeah its done but I have to gather people around soon all of this it's going to be confusing

Jay laughed and exhaled

Jay:man do you realise how rich you are , I wish I was you

Me:Jay i will always help so don't go behind my back please

Jay:i would never do that, unlike those fools am really scared of you

We laughed and drove home I have to check on the twins

REFILWE

Mike called to tell me he is done , I wore my mini leather skirt and my black body suit , my baby has been good to me , I wore my knee high red boots and wore my long coat i tied my hair into a bun

I heard the door open and heard Jay and Mike speak

Mike: Baby

Me:in the bathroom am getting ready

Jay:for what?

I came out the room applying my red lipstick i loaded my gun and put in my bag

Me:Baby i need you to hack the computer you Sent thato's body

Mike:Baby what are you planning

Me:just do as your told , and did you put the gun where I asked you

He nodded, I pecked his lips and left ,I can't belive am going to do this but why not

.
. .
. .
. .

.
.
I got to her flats and i went to the basement Mike's boys had him in a body bag and i told them to follow me,I went to take the gun under the flower pot and took the gun ,and went upstairs she lived on the 15th floor

.
.
.
.
I didn't even knock i just had the doors kicked down and she was crying the couch

Her:what are you doing here.....who are you?

Me:nc nc nc i can't belive you killed your boyfriend.

The boys put thato's body back on his wheel chair

And they left

Her:oh my god WHAT DID YOU DO

I was over her whining already, I roughly took her hand and covered her finger prints in the gun and i threw it on the floor She stood up , and i was walking towards her and she was also backing away

Me:why didn't you just do your job and stop being a bitch

Her:am sorry i didn't mean to...

Me:am sorry sweetie i just can't let you live because now people will know when to back off

She reached the window and i hit her with my gun on her head and she fell out the window

Me:how sad she killed herself

I made sure I wipe anytrace that I was here , I even used the mop to wipe my feet on the floor and i walked out

.
. .
. .

Him:Baby you did what?

Me:at had to be done bet you all the underground everybody's will know not to mess with us , were about to be parents babe we don't need this bullshit

Him:i love you

Me:i love you too now sleep the news are going to be all at it tomorrow , make sure you realese something in her memory i don't care what.

Him:are you okay

Me:am perfect now

He pulled me in and we cuddled and the dude had to

have me from behind and he was busy kissing neck
and my body failed me because I arched my ass and he
pounded me for dear life

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 44

A week later

REFILWE

Our house is finally ready and my baby bump is starting
to show but it's so small i can't believe I am 4 months
pregnant, Mike and i do go to couples therapy but the
bitch has a crush on my man that sometimes they gang
on me and he always pays when we sleep at night

Today is holding a meeting at our house and my dad is
also coming and i am shitting myself , my brothers
have been asking what the meeting is about but thing is
i don't know too really i just know that we are going to
announce that were expecting , am so glad that I have
no school because i can't deal shame

Mike had people come take our clothes and have them
take to our house , I am living the dream shame, I take
our things and go downstairs where he is checking us
out

I get there and he helps me with the bags

Me:babe i am not crippled

Him:but you are carrying precious cargo

I rolled my eyes at him

Me:Baby please let me hold my own bag

Imagine it's just a sling bag

Him:okay fine baby

We went out holding hands , and i notice the paparazzi is on is more than usual

Me:what this about

Him:you will see my love .

We drove to the Northcliff and we got to.our house and my god I still cry when i see it, I will never get over how beautiful and calm it is , this is going to be my zone I know it ,he takes his card and and scan it , then we go in and he parks in the drive way

We get off and go in the house and it's busy, flowers , food , drinks

Me:party

Him:no get together nothing big

We went to the third floor , not to be dramatic but this

floor is our space , let me say it's our bedroom and nothing else my closet is gigantic and so is his and yes they are separate

Our bed was designed at Sweden he says that he wants me to rest in a mattress that was done for me , wow dramatic much.

Me:i can't get over this house it's just so

Him:dreamy and i just can't get over it too

We showered together while making sweet sweet love to each other , yes i couldn't talent anymore .

Me: Baby when is my dad arriving

He looked at his phone

Him:shit in abiut 20mins Marcus went to fetch him

Me:Baby you know Marcus doesn't like being driver

Him:Baby but he offered moss

Me:hai love put him in heist or shipping weapons not this driving things , and i have been taking driving lessons

Him:okay baby

He wore his black ripped jeans and white golf shirt and out on his rolex

I on the other hand I wore my black short dress with a slight slit and my gladiator black LV shoes and then I let my afro be , am never changing my hair for nothing shame and i also wore my diamond Rolex

We went downstairs and i was helping with the food mainly beacuse I wanted to feast on some if them , this baby is sure making me eat shame

I heardbthe door belm and it was Justin and bontle they looked great and happy too I went too give them hugs and bontle was stark g at my tummy, he wanted to touch and i was ducking that made Mike laugh , my brothers also came and hugged them too

Me:Zweli where is your handbag

He gave me a stare

Mike:hay don't look at my wife like that

Menzi:man don't claim my sister like that

Bee:there we go again will you guys stop

Jay:Baby there is no use they won't stop

Bee:GOSH sis this house is out of this world hle

Me:i still have to pinch myslef

Zwe:well you guys are doing great for yourself man even though you cleaned our dad out

Me: mxm serves him right I hope he rots wherever he is

Mike:baby stop

He brushed my belly causing bontle to stare again .

Menzi:well thank you for not kicking us out

Mike:i would never do that am not heartless

It went silent then we all laughed so hard

Me:well that's debatable

Menzi:can we eat already

We all went sit down

Me:No were waiting for papa and the twins so relax

Zwe:Baby sis what did you eat kodwa your stomach is popping out and you look fat

Did he just....

Me:Zwe say that one more time ,say am fat one more time I will kill your ass

Menzi:Haibo u'funakunya wena don't yoh dare speak to your brother like that

These hormones are going to get me in trouble

Mike:and don't speak to my women like that in front of me , do it anytime but in front me

Zweli gave me the am going to get you for that look ,I sat on my man's lap beacuse I was scared yhuu

Me:bro am sorry neh

He just nodded

The door bell rang

My dad and the twins came in ,bontle and i ran to our dad and gave him a bone crushing hug and my stupid ass started crying hai don't give me that look i missed him , he let go of bontle and gave me a proper hug , bontle hates that I know

Me:i missed you so much pap

Kayla:ohk hello were here

Layla:stop they are bounding sis

We laughed.

He broke the hug and hled my arms and looked around and then back at me

Papa:you look so happy my baby , but i don't lie thus nonsense

Mike came and bro hugged him

Mike:tell her pa i have been talking her this not how a lady dresses

Jay came and hugged him too

Jay:tell bontle too pa

They met at the funeral and am glad they all get along , I hugged papa one more time and he gave me a squeeze

Bee:yhuu papa nna yanong

We laughed and we pulled her into after our hug I pulled him by his had and Zweli and Menzi stood up

Me:papa these are my brothers Menzi and Zweli

They shook hands and i told him how they have been here for me even after Mike's scandal

Me:papa please tell them too stop being so harsh and mean

Papa:its good my baby they need to keep you in check

My frowned and sulked ,they all laughed

We sat down having good conversation and laughing people getting to know each other i felt so complete and happy , I kept on rubbing on my tummy

Bee:sis are you okay you look a but I don't know

Me:am fine am just happy,and i haven't been been this

happy in while

Papa:it's good too we you smiling so I better hold my words for Mike

Me:yes papa please hold them i don't want to hear it

Menzi:baba mina i will help you with the talking

Zweli:hai lo he just needs I good beating nje lona

Mike:am going to kick your ass

He murmured and i chuckled because andizi to whatever fight shame

Mike stood up and looked at us

MIKE

I was nervous about a of this but it had to be done

Me:so you all must wonder why the sudden,meeting,well my baby and i have big news to share

Fifi looked at me nervously she knew it was time

Bee:areyou getting married

Kayla:oh my word did you proper Mikey did you

Gosh the two

Jay:let the men speak

We all had a light laugh

Me: as I was saying we have news

I took fifi's hand and she stood up and i begged her from behind

Me:we never planned this or anything but it happend

Fifi:and papa please don't be mad at me and you two also

She said looking at his brothers

Kayla:oh tell us alresdy.....*she gasped almost having a light bulb moment*

Us:WE'RE PREGNANT

There were oh's and ah's the girls came to hug us and lauging the twins were feeling fifi's stomach

Fifi:papa i know that it's not what you have planned for me but I am so sorry it happend and yiur going to be a grand father

She said and kneeled in front of her dad

Pa:it's really not i what i wanted for you my baby but ke tla reng but I hope the baby looks like you because hee Mike bathong

Fifi:thank you so much papa

Zweli:he is going to pay though

Menzi:yes there is no way he is not going to pay

Me:and i don't mind but there is something else i want to talk about

We all settled in to our sits

Me: i want to talk money,bussines and more am about to risk some things for me but I belive we are family and i shouldn't worry and j should trust you

It got tense the very same moment

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 45

MIKE

I was still finding words to properly explain this .

Me:I don't want anyone to feel left out but again I am not Jesus I am not giving handouts

Fifi:Baby what's going on , I just thought we're announcing our baby

She was still standing and i was rubbing her little bump

Me:yeah babe but my recent bussines ventures have caused some uncertainty , so let me clear this up

I say and down but I needed calm so I made her sit on my lap weird i know

Me:well let me start with you pa fifi has been worried that your all alone at he house , so I thought I could buy you a house wherever you want but here in gauteng what do you think about think about that?

Fifi:papa please don't say no , this way i can take care of you and your children will be closer

Pa:It has been lonely back home ,but I don't have the funds to bu....

Me:like i said pa I will take care of that

Pa:but son I don't want to strain your pocket

Nc these idiots laughed

Kayla:oh pa don't worry about that the house won't even dent his money

Me:sooooo!!!

Pa:i would like that but I still need a hobby

Fifi ran from my lap and went to hug her dad , I think am going to have her dad atleast 2hour from us

because my baby is a daddies girl wow, bontle was just smiling

Pa:as long as I get to see my kids that's okay

Just then I don't bell rang and it was Nokhanyo she waltzed in there in all smiles but fifi's smile disappeared

Fifi:what's she doing her

Layla:yeah who invited you your clearly not wanted

Zweli:i did

We all turned to look at him

Zweli:i just want the sisters to talk That's it

Fifi:bro i love you but this is not it , not in my house

She tried to up and leave

Me:Baby please

Menzi:hai kodwa nawe Zweli you never think yaz you know they don't get along

Fifi:and we never will and i mean ever

Pa:fifi ngawnaka clam down baby just let her sit we will deal with this later

Bee:marapa you can't just....

Pa:do it for me please my babies

Khanyo :Nice house ,see my dad's riches are working overtime

Fifi scoffed and folded her arms and i was holding on to her waist but she was so pissed

Me:can i continue

Them:yeah

Me:the Dlamini boys

Zweli:who is a boy wena

We laughed expect to Nokhanyo

Me:firstly i want your father out of that house i know she still lives with you, and i want her out too

I say pointing at Nokhanyo

Khanyo:what where am i supposed to live

Me:people work and they earn money to make a living now do it , the only reason the brothers are staying there is because they work with me

Zwe:am cool with it,but can't we give her a notice

Me:no am sure she has savings , better be out by this weekend am not joking

Jay:well shut just got real

Pa:hey wena moshimane language

Jay:am sorry pa

Me:and Menzi with my research it showed me you actually have the most i want you to continues with the Dlamini constructions and that name is going to change soon ,Zweli i want you to run the other bussines

They now what i mean by that

Me:when I say run i don't mean own so don't get it twisted

Menzi:just by that thank you man

They stood and we fist bumped

Me:Bontle you proved me wrong and definslty changed my first impression of you so I am going to invest in your bussiness and help you open a second branch in Pretoria i heard you sister say that just the other night , work hard and make me more money please

We laughed again and bontle was so happy she was actually crying

Me:Jay bro you have grown so much in the last couple of months, so I think your now ready to come work with me

He exhaled loudly and exagegaratively a d we laughed at that Jay is good in bussines but he is so lazy

Jay: am joking bro , I have a women to take care now and it'd be a honour to work with you

Me:Good welcome Mr COO Anderson

Fifi: am happy for you Jay

Her and Justin get along now ,shocked right

Me:my babies

Kayla/layla: yes bro

They blushed

Me:it's time to get of your asses and work am not your father

they exhaled and smiled at me

Me:you have degrees use them , am going to create internships at work the money i give you your going to work for it

Kayla:it's was bound to happen soon

Layla:does that mean your not cutting our allowances

She flapped her eyelashes

Me:no work and i won't, slack off and i will cut it off

Them:thank you bro we won't disappoint you

I still find it weird that they say such long sentences together

Me: I trust

Khanyo: you know am here too right , I am right here

Me:So?

Khanyo:what do you mean so , it was my dad's company you took you dnt help my brothers and everyone but you just jump past me

Me:i don't belive i owe you anything , so please leave or stay quiet , quite frankly i don't care

Menzi:Nokhanyo hamba please

Khanyo: i am not going anywhere

Fifi:am tired of your nonsense wena , don't say I didn't warn you

She shifted in her seat uncomfortably

Zweli:maybe it was a bad idea to invite her

Bee:you think!!

Bontle has zero tolerance for Nokhanyo and i think we all have no tolerance for her and i know the only

reason fifi has not gone crazy it's because her father is here .

Fifi:are we done I actually don't wanna be here anymore

Me:Baby don't be like that please

Pa:eya hle my baby , we have to create the baby and the house

Khanyo:the baby what baby are you pregnant ?

Bee:okay thats it's

She took her by her arm and pulled her until she was out and she walked back in

Bee:i had enough okay am Sorry

Fifi: i don't care

Zweli:i don't know where to stand and st so I will just shut my mouth

Menzi:yeah what he said

Me:this is not going as planned so I might hold something off

REFILWE

Me: Hold what off babe

My dad have been giving each other weird stares all evening ,and i want to know why

Papa:just do it son if you wait any longer you might chicken out

Layla:what's going on

Jay just chuckled oh he knows what they are talking about too

Me:what's going on my love

He helped me stand just in front of the family , he held my cheeks and kissed my forehead

Mike:I don't know how to say this or even how to express myself but I will try.....baby what i feel for you is beyond human emotions ,I love you so much that I wonder if your real , I have to pinch myself sometimes when i wake up and i see that am cuddling you

Daddy choked on his drink

Mike:am sorry pa

He went down on his knee and looked at me , Fuck fuck fuck

Mike:i went down to see your dad a couple of days ago to ask for his blessing to marry you my love after telling me where to get off he agreed , am not perfect but you have loved me anyway , you showed me real love and made me believe in real love againI have lived for you ever since I meet you at that Book shop,

and my heart only beats for you know and will forever beat for you , refilwe my love , my everything will you please baby make me the happiest man in the world and marry me my love?

Jesus the water works were just doing the things shame and the girls were squeling in excitement , I didn't even realise i was nodding because i couldn't speak

Papa:words ngwanaka words baby

I chuckled a bit

Me :of course i Will marry you baby ,I will marry you my love

This idiot forgot to take out the ring , my god it was the biggest diamond i have ever seen , after he slipped in on my finger he spinned me around and we kissed and everyone came hugging us

Am going to be a whole wife

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 46

MIKE

I am still hugging her I don't want to show the guys that I am crying , I think she gets the hint because she pulls

me out of the room quick and w/o is my tears then
kisses me

Her:am so happy,why didn't you hint anything

Me:it's would have been a surprise baby

I say still wiping my tears and she attacks me with a
kiss its so passionate that I forgot we have guests for a
moment, the kiss is ruined by my sisters running to us

Kayla:let me see it soon to be sis

Layla:did he do a good good We want to see

She wiped her own tears

Her: i haven't even had a proper look myslef

They loom and gasp atbthe same time just admiring the
rock ,yes i designed a big ring on purpose i want these
little vultures to see it glow from a mile away and they
should now she is taken and she is mine she is Mike's
Anderson soon to be wife

Layla:i knew he wouldn't disappoint

Kayla: ready to give up the player card

They all fold their arms and look at me ,yoh even my
fiance this traitor

I pull her and hug her from behind

Me:i did that the moment I saw her so yes ,yes i have

I ask Kayla and Laylas to leave because i forgot a peice of info that I should have told her

Me:my wife to be

She giggles puts her arms around my neck and pecks my lips

Her:husband to be

We both chuckle a bit

Me:I forgit to be you that all the Dlamini companies are in your name I had them signed to you everything that belonged to him is now yours well not the underground stuff that's mine to deal with

She looked shocked

Me: i have sold all the cars he owns and they made roughly about 10, 5 million i have made a black card for you tonuse i will give it to later , all his investments are locked for our baby and it's about 10 million

She was crying agian and her grip to me became a but weak because shaking

We were near the stairs and she say down

Her:can't you keep it you know ,I don't want to change and i see that money changes people and i don't ever want to change you see how these rich spoilt brats act

I think i just fell in love with her more

I kneeled in front of her

Me: you will never changethe fact that you just said that shows me you will never change and if you do change i will have your dad kick you butt

She gilled

Me:I (peck) love (peck) you (peck)

She giggled

Her: I love you too sweetie

We went bsck and everyone was having a blast and talking her dad looked happy and unknown that makes her happy,she has told me I will come second when coming to Him,lol i sulked for the weekend but I saw where she was coming from

zweli:dammit Mikey you surprised me ,treat her man well man if you don't I will break your arms

We laughed and fist bumped ,the girls were all over fifi ,her ring and her bump

And we were having cognac

Pa: your making and honest women out of my daughter son ,I trust you will take care of her

Me: of course i will i have learned not to mess with her trust me I have learned

They all looked at me

Jay:she kicked your ass didn't she

Pa:yep she definalty kicked your butt

Menzi and Zweli laughed

Me: my like she whipped my butt with her belt

They all laughed so hard they couldn't even stop

Pa:now that's my girl

Jay:i so wish I was there to witness it all

Pa:but treat each other well,I think i am fine with my house back home

Me:why the change of mind

Zweli:it's really hard too root up and just leave , I understand

Me:let me atleast renovate and buy you new furniture

Pa:okay son ,but look at your house wow , I can't belive my daughterlives here

Menzi:she deserves all the happiness you did a good job raising her ,I don't know where she would be if you

didn't take her

Zweli:you really did baba and thank you for not resenting us

Pa:you are not your father

Me:and she loves you guys

Jay:Wow will you stop being sappyI almost cried

There goes Jay being a fool

REFILWE

This is what dreams are made of right

Our geust just left , my dad left with bontle and Justin he says he wants to see where his other daughter lives

Am probably the happiest i have ever been , my Instagram feed is a beauty but i didn't post about my engagement nope I don't wantbto deal with the media now.

We just had amazing shower sex and were tired,this baby is just making me horny all the time And honestly at this moment i don't mind, I am giving myself to my fiance

Me:am so happy am scared

She pulled me closer to him

Him:what are you scared of

Me:my happiness never lasts and i am scared this is going to end and i don't wantbto to end

Him:as long as I am alive nothing is going to change babe Okay ,but we're going to have challenges but i am always going to be here for you

Me:that's all I need to know my love

I dosed off and I assume he did too

Morning

Okay I got lost so many times and this is my house SMH

Me:Baby Tumi and aphiwe are coming let go off me please

Him:okay fine , and i hired a cleaning company okay I don't want you cleaning this big old house

Me:I don't mind but don't hire a chef i will cook for you

Him:Baby can you even cook

I exhaled exagegaratively

Me:the insult

He laughed

Him:am gojng to the office today ,I havent been since

those fools stunt

Me:am just glad that mess is over

Him:yeah me too but I need to find my mom now

Me:Baby let her be for a while mayne she needs her own space but call her to make sure she is okay

Him:okay love

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Aphiwe and Tumi are still shocked at my house that they haven't said anything to them , were sitting down and were having breakfast

Tumi:i can't belive yihr 18 and already living the life babe

Phiwe:Fuck

We look at her

Me:well I have something to tell you guys

Tumi:oh don't worry babe we can see the house

Phiwe:yeah we see it clearly

Mike comes down the stairs looking all hot j his suite
Jesus am already wet

Him:Baby no no wenjsut got engaged why are you not
wearing your ring

He takes my hand and slides it in ,way to ruin a
surprise,they pushed Mike and grabbed my hand

Him:excuse me

That waved goodbye to him

Him:Wow okay bye baby love you

Me:love you too my love

he left

Tumi :get the fuck out of here wow am happy for you
babe

We did our crazy dance around shit I forgot to tell them
am expecting too

Me:ladies stop

Thay stoped dancing and looked at me and i took off
my gown i was wearing my bra and lace panty but I
didn't care my little bump was showing , aphiwe just
let her tears drop and Tumi looked astonished

Me:am having a baby

Tumi:no shit babe

Phiwe:am so happy that everything is finally coming together my love

I once told them my life story i geuss that's why were all emotional

Me:were having a baby

Them:yes baby were having a baby

We all hugged and did our crazy dance agian

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 47

MIKE

It's takes a lot for me to trust but I feel like there is no need to be worried buuuuut Zweli sometimes makes me feel uneasy hence I always have my eyes on him , but i am not going to tell fifi that she would be mad thato don't trust his brother but I have my sixth's sense working over time

Tonight were hitting our biggest heist (am not greedy i just like having money so don't judge)and i decided to go in the action and Justin also said she wants to join am so excited it's been a while since I have been in the

field , I finally have sea and thabang back and i made sure to give them big fat cheques for their loyalty to me ,I am a fair boss after all .

Am not sure how my fiance is going to take me going to the field with the boys but I need this ,I miss the rush of everything.

I just finished at the office and i was sent candidates for my new personal assistants and i am really not in the mood for any of this, I just leave their CV's on top of the table and pack my stuff and leaveI have to get ready

On my way I call Zweli just to make sure my arrangements are going well

Phone call

Him:are you really coming with us

Me: what's with you man , is everything ready

Him:yeah they are but Marcus asked to come with us

Me:yeah tell him it's okay its been a while ,please arrange extra security for your sister just for the night

Him:already done but which sister are you talking about

Me:my wife Zweli I don't care about the other one

Him:mxm you still fucked her , I will need up security

for your house too

Me:i can't believe I had to ask

Him:yey I had a lot on my plate please

Me:whatever just make sure everything is ready when i get there

Him: if you make it ,you seem to forget your fiance is a bull fighter

We both laugh ,I think am going have to lie to her

Me:not unless I lie

Him:hai ndoda don't I don't want to die bafo for helping you to lie

Am glad they are teaching me some words am never really lost

Me:i can't tell her the truth she will freak don't pretend lime you don't know how your sister is

Him:hai okay fine

I laugh at how extra he is being

Me:cool

I hang up

.

.
. .

I just got out the shower and she is giving me such a sharp i think i might end up tell g her but i have to be strong not today

Me:Baby really were going to the club the biys forced me to celebrate

I hate lying to her and worse she is sulking

Her:Baby please don't go this house gets so lonely when you are not here

Me:Baby festive is approaching and i will be here everday

She huffs and throws herself on the bed and she is naked , she had a shower before me but she won't dress up

Me:are you gonna sit naked

Her: it's hot Mike I don't feel wearing anything

She says and sleeps on her belly that's always makes me cringe a bit

Me:am Mike now

Her:hai futsek your leaving me here all alone

I laugh at how mad she is these hormones do I number on her .

I wear my black ripped jeans , my long sleeves v-neck t-shirt and my long beige coat I brush my hair and wore my Rolex watch ,I opted for my brown timmys dammit i am dripping swagger today lol

She comes in still naked j think the Lord is testing me

Her:why do you have to dress up Mike,o batla banyana ba go bone (do you want girls to see you)

Me:Baby what ?

Her:Mike don't test ,ughhh i hate that your so hot couldn't you be ugly or have smelly breath

I laugh

Her:it's not funny

Okay now she so crying and i go to hug her and kiss her forehead

Me:promise you baby I will back soon okay

she ndoda and gets under the covers and i kiss her and she responds and after that , I go

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

.

It's started peacefully we took the cars peacefully and we managed to transport them , I don't where the hell the cops came from but now bullets are flying all over this damn place

We tried to escape but I realise were surrounded ,I want nothing happening to Zweli and Menzi so I am shooting who ever is aiming at them.

Zwe:man how the hell are we going to getaway it looks like we are surrounded

Jay:stop stating the obvious

Me:relax men

Menzi:relax relax how

Me:STOP SHOUTING I NEED TO THINK

Jay:stop panicking we will get out of this

Just the Marcus appears with two AK47 and hands me one, he started shooting on one side and i went for the other side

While the others went for the ones that were hiding

Me:i think that's it guys round up and get to the car

Them:sure boss/yeah boss

Everyone went on to their cars ,i was whistling while opening my car I was about to go in

Jay:MIKE LAY DOWN

I turned to look what was going and then....

BANG !! BANG!!

I was out .

REFILWE

I couldn't sleepni miss him so much ,I think i have left a 100 massages and calls for him and honeslty i feel like a crazy fiance now

So I just go downstairs go to drink some soy milk and cookies and tin roof ice cream and i switch on the tv and watch Ex on the beach , that's my guilty pleasure lol

I was still dosed off and slept on the couch when i heard the door bust open it was Jay,but then I saw Menzi and Zweli carrying a very bloody Mike,

I started crying and rushed to them,Jay quickly cleared the couch for him and they laid him on the couch and roped his shirt open

Zweli:we need towels sis

I was just glued to the ground

Zwe:towels refilwe man

He half yelled

I ran to the nearby bathroom and got as many towels as I could and gave them the towels and then they used them to out pressure to the wounds

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

He was taken to one of the room attended by his private doctors

I was crying uncontrollably and i had to think of my baby to i don't want to strain myslef butnhow can I not when i do t know what is happening to the love of my life

Zweli:he will be fine sthadwasam man please don't

Menzi:everyone was down and out what the hell happend

Jay:that person came out of no where ,but it looked like a women when i screamed for him

Menzi:it was like the bullet was meant for him

Me:what the hell I thought you went to the club

.....what are you talking about

I said softly still crying

But they continued like i was not there

Zweli:we have to look into that

Jay:Marcus , Sean and thabang are already in it

Did they go to some job and it went wrong that's what i am getting anyway

Me:Menzi what happend please tell

Just the we hear commotion upstairs and hear the machines go off that's enough to make me faint

I say that because i passed out

.
.
.
.
.

I tried to open my eyes but I can't

Zweli:we should've instead he stay behind i swear am going to kill her

Menzi:calm down zwe am sure there is a logical explanation

Jay:what explanation,huh what explanation

I managed to open my eyes and first thing I did I felt my baby bump and luckily I felt no pain ,I let out a loud sigh of relief and they all gathered me but I pulled them to me and i cried

Me:is he okay

Zweli:he is unconscious but stable

Jay looked at him , like you better tell her everything

Me:go on bhuti please

Menzi:he is in ICU intensive care at this moment

Me:what are you talking about

Menzi:try to relax babywan please

Me:how can I relax when he.....OMG he could dieno no he can't leave me ,he can't leave us

Me:it's too soon

I felt like my life and soul are leaving my body

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 48

It's been a week already and still nothing his condition is still the same , fifi looks like a shadow of herself and the fact that Nokhnayo shot his man is driving me crazy ,whay the hell would she listen to dad hasn't she listened, Justin knows so there is no way I can help her , she got herself in this mess so am going to let her be because i kniw Justin is alresdy on her ass , Menzi completely as she her hands off her , after we saw the footage we had it destroyed because well we were there doing illegal activity too

I haven't had the bravery to even go see what's happening , do they have them or maybe they don't, one thing i know is that i won't be able to watch as they do whatever they do to my sister .

I just got to aphiwe and luckily her friend is leaving to see her family for the rest is the holidays ,I went straight to her room and sat on the edge of her bed

Her: talk to me

She was leaning on the door frame

Me:it's all too much now ,I thought atleast she had a brain ,and how could she let baba get her in so much trouble and the worse thing now is that i can't even protect her this time I can't stop them.... I tried to tell her to move on i will help her with money but she just had to be selfish like always but mina am done shame am so done

Her:Baby i am lost tell me what's going on at least I would know how to respond to you baby

Me:i just wanted to vent sthadwasam it's no thing okay

She sits next to me , I want to tell her but then again I don't want her to live this life I want her far from it actually .

For now i appreciate the emotional support I am from her that is all I need at this moment

Her: you look so tired

Me:i am tired

She sighed

Her:i can't believe fifi has to go through this how will she enjoy her pregnancy,she just got engaged and now this , i hope whoever did this rots shame.

Me:Am pretty sure they will

I pull her closer to me and kiss her i just want relax tonight , I carry then put her on the bed and she wraps her legs around me but I want them on my shoulders and that's where I put em i take of her dress and she has no undergarments on I trail my kisses from her legs straight to her p*ssy after that i muff her till i feel like it's enough, I take off my clothes and pull her to the edge of the bed and thrust into her same time and had the best time ever

.

.

.
. .
. .

Her:my god baby infant feel my legs yoh

I chuckle as I nibble on her breast

Me:i must have done a pretty good job then

She laughs and gets on top of me , she never gets tired
this one

Me:Baby

Her:let me the one that gets you tired now

We both laugh as she gets on with it .

JUSTIN

I am not sinister like my brother is but what that girl
did to her is enough to make me care about nothing at
this moment and uts frustrating because we have not
been able to track her it's like she went off the radar
just like that but I have a lot of people looking for her

Bontle is trying to be there for her sister but I can see
her heart breaks because at this moment there is
nothing we can do

Fifi asked we give her some space for a bit and bontle
said that's what she does , it's too bed their dad had to

leave and yet again it's good He left how would we explain how he got shot ,and really I am glad that my mom is not here to witness all this , the twins are worried sick about all of this

Bontle and i we are watching or is it watching us

Her:she is not coping at all and she hardly eats that's not healthy and please tell me yoh found shiver that did this

Me:were still looking.....Am so exhausted baby I can't even think

Her:you need to rest Jay,you haven't slept in a week

Me: how do i when my brother is on his death bed

Her:and your no use if you can't even think baby please rest , you look drained please please rest my love

Me:hey baby don't cry

I wipe her tear with my thumb

Her:i know it's selfish for me to say this but am so happy your okay , I would have lost my marbles if you were the shot

Me:yeah i am okay

We both snuggle up next to each and continue watching T.V but my mind is on finding that girl and her father

REFILWE

How do i live when he looks half dead ,I wish j could
hive him my body for him to use so that i can be the
one that sleeps on that bed because i am not coping its
been a week , a week and nothing has changed

Nokhanyo really has balls , Justin has his own search
party ask so do I , and i have Marcus and Sean leading
on this when i find her she is going pay i have really
had enough of that girl , the only thing is that they are
high profile and one needs to be careful with such cases
but they are as food as dead because i let them live for
way to all

All this pain ,anger and rage i am feeling am going to
take it out on them , I didn't want to do anything to
them.because they are Menzi and Zweli's family and
that's the reality i was faced with but now they have
just pushed me to a point where I don't give a fuck who
they are

I sit by Mike the whole day hoping that he would wake
up but it's nothing the doctors haven't list hope though
, they say he can hear everything i say that's why I
make it a point that install him that I love him every
chance i get i want that to keep him going i want him to
have a reason to fight ,I can be a single mother .

Me:so I know who shot you baby,and i think we let
them get away with too much don't you think

My tears fall uninvited

Me:we tried to let them be butthey thought were fools for doing that and it's enough baby look at you know

I bite my bottom lip because i want to suppress my crying but the tears fall now

Me:like you said you would kill for me , am promising you the same ,when i find them they are dead I don't even care what my brothers have to say about that,but yet again I feel like death would be easy but it's the only way to get them away from us and forever this time

I try wiping my tears but they are replaced with new ones

Me:i love you Mike,my life is so empty without you baby so empty sonplease wake up for me , for our baby and for us , you have a lot to live for sweetie so please come back

I look at my slightly bigger bump and i place his hand on it

Me:see that i can't do this without you

I kiss his hand and place it back to his bed,this room has been turned into his own personal hospital

I go downstairs and have my ice cream it's the only thing i can take in really

My phone rings and it's Marcus

Me:please tell me you have them

Him:we have them don't worry

Me:where did you find them ,were they still in the country

him:they were about to jump the boarder going to Lesotho i think .

Me:tell me when yoh at the warehouse okay

Him:i can always take them out now

Me:no ,I want to do this myself you will help me right and please hurry

Him:were already on our way butni think you should rest

Me:i will set when they are dead Marcus

He chuckles

Him:yoh okay then.

He hanged up and i called Menzi he seems more intact than Zweli is

Phone call

Him:Babywam

Me:they found them

I hear him sigh

Him:am not getting involved they are still family so i would rather hear that they are dead in the news

I feel so bad but this had to be done

Me:Menzi it has to be done or they will keep on taking and taking from me , when will it be enough

Him:it's true but like i said that are family

Me:i shouldn't have told and yes you will see utin the news before the week ends

I hanged up,I am not backing down from this I can't care who begs its something i have to do for my own sanity

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

MORNING

I just got out the shower and am doing my hair for the firts time in a long time ,I lotion then ware my Adidas tracksuit with my sleepers

On them go donwstairs and here , Zweli,Menzi ,Jay and Marcus are there

Me:why so early in my house ,don't even knock

Jay:yoh didn't hear the knock or the door bell

Me:whatever

I go and take out my ice cream

Zweli:you can't keep eating that thing wena man

Menzi:think of the babh please

Me:it's no like i am not eating ,and you know that's not the reason why your here

Marc:they at the warehouse safely tucked in and drugged

I don't why but I laugh at his stupid joke you cabt on Marcus on that

Jay:so what do we do

Me:i want them dead

Zweli and Menzi flinch at my press but I don't care

Menzi:cabt we find another way to punish them

Zweli:anything but killing them

Jay:excuse me what

Marc:yeah no they were giving more than enough opportunities to back off but they didn't

Me:and if I let them live they are going to come for me and they might just succeed this time , they are clearly ready for their death

Zweli:am not gonna be there

Menzi:no yeah me too

Me:i wasn't going to ask

Marc:when is it happening

Me:in time ;but let's go now

Jay , Marc and i take our leave and they follow us out

I turn to look at them

Me:don't you dare stand in my way

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 49

REFILWE

I had to call in a favour for a certian from a friend ,

Phone call

Me:Mrs Ndlovu

She laugh

Pali:hey babe how are you doing

Me:am good and you

Pali:am good do you need something

Me:yes I do actually ,I have recently been met with some problems and i heard you and your husband having been Woking on a acid fluid that eats up the inside slow

Pali:yeah we have but uts something we dknt distribute,we use to you know

Me:well I kinda need to do you know what

She laughed

Pali:Damn girl who pissed you off

Me:oh honey it's a story for another day ,we should catch up one day

Pali:yes we should and lucky for you we have the acid fluid i will ask one of my ma to send it to you

Me :thanks sweetie

I hanged up and i noticed we were already close to the warehouse

Me:Marcus

Marc:yeah boss lady

I chucked

Me:is eveything laid out for me

Jay:you don't have to do anything you know mlit might get it much for you

Marc laughed

Jay:okay what's funny

Marc:the girl here has alresdy killed , 2 security guys ,crippled a man and recently killed a certain receptionist.

Jay looked truly shocked

Me:i do what i have to do , and right now I am going to do what i have to do

Marc:so what's your plan

Me:suicide

Marc laughed so hard I couldn't help but join because i knew exactly what he was thinking

Jay:okay now what

Marc:Suicide is like a signature move ,they killed thabo and made it seem like it was the girl

Jay:Jesus

Me:cheat or hurt my sister I will do the same with you

We arrived at the ware and got out and they took me straight to the place they were at .

They were tied up to the electric chairs and my firts thought was just to.kill them immediately but that would so easy i want that acid fluid and that will make them suffer it will eat time up so slow

I sat down on the table that and banged on it because it was steel , that stared them and they woke up

Me:well here they are ,bad daddy and sister , how you doing

They stayed quiet

Me:quiet they are , now you can't talk you kill my mother, you bitch seduce my man but now your quiet how continent right

Mr D:yey wena ntombi untie me and let me and my daughter go or else

Me:or else what old men , am not scared of you

Khanyo:am sorry I never should have dad forced me and said that he needed my help,I should have

Me:i don't forgive you

Marc came and brought me the acid fluid i mixed it with water and out in a syringe and put a needle in it

And I gave them each a shot in their wrist veins

Me:okay my beloved now that is done

I put down the and took 3 knives and stabbed Khabazela in his legs over and over again ,he was huffing and groaning in pain

Khanyo :please please stop

She was screaming,good thing we had Jay and Marcus in here

Me:didn't i ask you to stop Nokhanyo,didn't i say stay away from my family didn't I

I turned to her and took let hands that were tied to cross them across her arm so she could strangle herself

Me: i told you , the fact that Mike slept with you I only did a little bit of harm because Mike knew what he was doing ,but no you kept coming and coming didn't

Mr d:leave my child alone you bitch

Me:you gave life to this bitch Khabazela

She looked like she was running out of air so i let her go and she was grasping for air

Khanyo:your crazy

Me:it run in the family don't you think

Me:SEAN

He came in running and i told him to do what i told him to do

MrD:so all along wena mfananyana you were working for them , we paid you wena bastard

Sean:i know where my loyalties lie man

He said As he was plugging the electric shock and he pinned them just on his penis

Mr d:what are you doing ,what the hell do you think you doing

Me:oh am just trying your Dick off

Jay and Marc laughed loudly

Me:it's useless anyway

Sean turned on the machine and he was vibrating in shock

While he was still being shocked i pulled nokanyo to a

goner with with a torch she looked petrified .

Me:am glad you have the good sense to be scared

Luckily she was wearing a dress ,I took of her panties and spread her legs open

Khanyo :what the hell are you doing

She managed to say between he loud cry ,but I decided to shut my emotions ,turned in the blow torch and melted her Vagina closed ,she passed out from all the crying and am guessing pain

I pulled her back next to her dad and called Sean and thabang back , I told them to take them back to the motel they stayed at , after that we gave them the bottle of acid fluid

Me: the reimaing of that acid mis mix it with water in two glasses make sure it has their finger prints and make sure you erase every trace of you ever being there you here me

Them:yes baby mama

I chuckled a bit

Me:Marc please take me home

Jay :fuck me ,remenjd me to never mess with you or tour sister for that matter

He said while we were walking out

Marc:told yoh she was bad ass.

We went in the car and drove off but I had to make one last stop somewhere

ZWELI

They are dine to i can feel it but how do i hate my sister when they brought this to themselves ,she did warn them ,she did tell Nokhanyo to back off but they didn't now they are dead

Menzi:i was hoping she wouldn't mayabe torture them and then let them go

I laughed

Me:she is a Dlamini bafo she wouldn't have never let them go

Menzi:you know what's funny

Me:you cabt find it in you to hate her or oven blame her for what she is doing

She chuckles then rubs his head with his hands

Menzi:exactly ,we have lost so much time with her all because of u'baba so I can't,I just

Me:I know and the fact that she told us, is just making it hard to find something wrong with what she did or is doing

Menzi: this is so fucked up Zwe man

We heard the door bell ring and Menzi ran up to open and it was fifi , she had red and puffy eyes to show that she was crying

Menzi pulled her in for a hug and my body dragged me there too and i too hugged them.

Me:it had to be done right

She nodded

Her:please don't hate me , but no was never going to rest

Menzi:it's not easy but I don't hate

Me:i don't hate you sthadwasam i could never

We broke the hug

Her:i know you guys were a family before me and probably will forever love them more than me ,but then I will never regret what i just did , I just hope you don't resent me for it

She kissed our cheeks and left

Me:so they are dead

Menzi:yeah they are

We went and poured ourselves whiskey and sat there without saying nothing to each other

It was a lot to process

REFILWE

I just got home and I told Justin and Marcus that they can go, i was so tired that I used the bathroom that was downstairs to take a shower after I was done ,I covered myself with the towel and went to the kitchen to make myself chamomile tea with honey and soy milk ,I took the chocolate nutmeg ice cream and went upstairs,I changed into his hoodie with no undergarments at all ,I switched on his laptop and searched for a movie on Netflix

I opted for a cheesy romantic movie,I don't know why i was breaking my heart with them because my man is in his death bed

After my set up was done i took my tea while sipping on it and went to his hospitalized room , I just knew that the sight was going to break my heart the tea will help me suppress my cry ,the doctor said I should try less to put stress on him ,that meant less crying for me

As soon as i opened the door ,I dropped my cup of tea

Me:WHERE THE FUCK IS HE?

My tears where already falling,what the fuck is going that was my last thought before i passed out

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 50

MIKE

I woke up about 3 hours ago but the house was empty, my body felt like it was hit by a truck and Lord Jesus my muscles felt really mushed

The doctors did their check ups and everything they said I need to take it easy for atleast 4 weeks so that i could be completely healed ,I chased them out after they were busy poking my body and eveything,I didn't know where my phobe was ,disavantge of a big house you get lazy looking for stuff so I just gave up and went to my study while waiting for my baby to come back home ecause i did notice that she was not around.

2 hours later

I have been in here long enough so I just decide enough with work and make a plan to get a phone am a bit worried now , you can imagine how hard it is to climb the stairs , as am limping i get a but closer to the 2nd floor i notice that she is in the floor completely passed out oh my good what the hell happend

I quickly avoid the pain i am feeling and hurry to her and kneel besides her and lift her by the neck a bit so that i can lift her head a bit.

Me:Baby, oh god baby please wake

Shit i don't even know where my phone is , I carry her
,men this baby is making her heavy
. fuck baby she needs to wake up soon ,I hurry
downstairs to the fridge cut up an onion and hurry
back to our room.

I make her sniff the onion and she wakes up crying
struggling to catch her breath,she was out of it for a bit
,she turned her head a bit and saw i saw her tears
falling and hugs me so tight it hurts but I wouldn't dare
break that hug because i missed her so much ,hearing
her speak but not being able to answer her hurt me
more than the bullets that went through my flesh .

Me:am okay baby ,I promise I am okay

She just nods not letting me go and i must say i didn't
mind she smelled so fresh , she broke the hug and
kissed me before i know it i am met by a slap

Me:Baby what was that for

She looks me deep in the eyes and holds my checks and
gives me a kiss

Her:that was for scaring me I....

The water works again ,I have to tell our baby to give
my baby a break honeslty she is making her crazy

Me:am okay babe ,please let go your hurting me

She giggles and checks whether i am okay ,she holds
her tummy a bit

Her:she has been through a lot baby ,can we take a rest and enjoy the festive season ,work from home please please , am so tired and i just want to relax please baby please

She looked at me almost pleading

Me:your right we should take it easy

Her:we haven't been on a date , we haven't properly celebrated our engagement , we havent had the time to register it on our minds that we are about to be parents we need to do those thing so that we don't lose ourselves

She scooted over and i layed next to her and she snuggled up next to me

Me:we are have been losing touch haven't we

Her:yea we have , and baby

I raised my eyebrows and looked at her

Me:yes speak to me baby

Her:Mike am horny

I just bust out lauging from her honesty and her face when she said that

Me:oh sweetie I know baby i am just as horny but I can't perform while mg body is still aching

Her:i will do all the work my love

I shake my head and kiss her forehead and i see her
her eyes glisen a bit with tears

Her:your so stingy with whats mine we tena wena
man(your annoying)

Her mood changed for a bit and i couldn't read her
thoughts

Me:Baby and then?

Her:never scare me like that,I don't know what i would
do if I lost you, I have been eating ice cream everyday

Me:oh no that has to change my love We have to gou
out today

Her:i want steak,and pork chops ,I need them i had a
work today,killing people is not easy

She says and immediately covers her mouth....she said
that so casually it actually turned me on a bit yes i
know i am crazy right

Me:excuse me what??!

Her:.....

Me:Baby please don't make me lose my mind tell me
what the hell happend

Her:Hee don't fuck with me Mike i did what i had to do okay , if i didn't act fast who knows what could have happend and besides Jay and Marcus helped me

Me:Baby who did you kill

She tell me everything and what she did ,I had a quick mind to switch on the T.V and their "suicide" death is all over the news

Me:well fuck that I have a SAVAGE women over here

Her: Mike I don't ever want to do that ever again

Me:but baby what if j get shit again

Her:you kniw what they should shoot you again for lying to me , wingers shot at a club

She says while hitting me with a pillow over and over again

Me:okay my love am so sorry I will never lie again

Her:please

She gets on tops of me and slowly pushes me to lay on my back

Me:Baby my body hurts

Her:well let me take care of you then

Holly hell is good to be back from the dead Lol

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 51

5 days later

MENZI

Having to bury both your sister and father at the same time is not easy at all , I haven't even shed a tear ,I hate them for not staying away otherwise we wouldn't have had this predicament at all , I am happy there is no will to read ,most of the family memeber didn't even come because he was not a rich man anymore ,news about him losing everything reached home very quickly

Zweli is going through it but am glad he has a girlfriend to take care of him ,even though he pretends like he is fine I know deep down he is hurting him and i are very different and right now were the last of my father's close family , oh and the wife is refusing to the leave the house she claims that she loved dad but we don't have the strength to fight so we let her be .

I am at the club ,am here just to distress alone ,i don't feel like company today

Suddenly I see the twins coming to me ,Jesus they are hot aren't they .

Kayla:hwy you ,you don't look so good

Layla:you don't have to pretend with us

Me:girls am okay really but you can join if you want

They laugh and then high five

Them:of course like that was a question wow

Okaaaay

Me:don't do that ladies it's creepy

They laugh again

Kayla:it's a twin thing you would get it

Layla:we can't even help it sometimes

Me:it's weird

Layla:yeah yeah whatever

Their champagne came and they popped their bottles
layla changed her seat and sat next to me , I was now in
the middle of them .

Layla:so how is it being a boss

Me:Mike is getting us to move here to joburg actually
transferring that what i mean to say , it's going to make
my work quite easy and less straining

Kayla:yeah that means that you won't be going away

lime you planned

Me:yea ,uts saving me the trouble of going to week end meeting and report taking and all that nonsense

Layla:hey what if Kayla and I transfer to working for you or with you, Mike is so boring he is only seeetnwith your sister

Me:i am not as laid back as I am at the office you know

Their favariot song came on and they stood up and went to dance, okay my fantasy is coming true watching twins bump and grind on each to a beyonce song

Good lord that was very sexy for me to watch, I had to stand up and adjust myself because u'bafo was getting excited

After the song was over they came and we had shots i ended dancing with them and i was in the middle of them (sandwich dance baby) thank god I am drunk because i would be scooping one of them hey maybe both of them

Kayla:we should go guys

Me:yeah am drunk now

Layla:don't worry menz we will drive but you can't go home

Me:Yeah whatever

Hey don't judge me I have been Dr inking dance this afternoon and they just came in

We drove to their house and went straight to their roomwait what ?

Me:you sure a room

Them:yes we never out grew that part

We laughed and i just threw myself on the bed and they took of their dresses and were left on their undergarments and put me in the middle

I don't know what's going on but I am not complaining all

Kayla: this is not weird right

Layla:we have a bit men on our bed , so no it's not weird

Me:i am right here you know

They chuckle

Kayla:sleep Menzi

Layla:yeah sleep

Kayla put her leg just on top of mine and after some time we fell asleep.

MORNING

MIKE

I am in our home gym working out ,i need to get back my strength

Me:Baby stop watching

Her:am your fiance love i can do whatever i want

Me:yeah you mean you have been violating my body everyday

Her:Baby are you complaining

Me: i think that's why my body us not healing

She is sitting on the yoga Matt doing her stretches and what not

Her:come to think of it i have never heard you complain so shut it my love

Me:pregnant you is so bossy

Her:yeah well I.blame tour baby

I go and join her.on the Matt and kiss the baby bump

Her:i don't like this baby she is already taking space

I laughed

Me:are you jealous sweet heart

She turned to me and pushed to the ground and sat on top of me

Her:i just love you being inside if me ,is it a crime baby

Me:well who the hell am i to say no to that

I can't wait till am fully healed then this session are going to be ten times longer than they last now because we don't want to strain my body

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Me:Jesus fifi are you trying to kill

She gets off on top of me as were trying to catch our breath

Her:we should probably go take shower now

Me:yes we do and i want seconds

We ran out the gym and went to our room and inside the ensuit and had our shower after the whole thing we went to our room and each to our closet

She wore her knee high black dress and prada Sandles and tied up her hair

Me:Baby are we going somewhere

Her:yeah I made a breakfast reservation so hurry up babe

Me:okay

I wore my black ripped jeans and a white golf tee

Her:see you look good babe

I like the simple things we do , sex and having dinner ,doctors appoints , it's very fulfilling actually.

KAYLA

Okay I know what we first night was weird but I happen to like Menzi and so does my sister so we thought if we both stick to him he will choose but he seemed to like us both really, we have dated the same guy but it was a long time ago and it never really worked so I really don't want that

We just woke but Menzi is still out of it

Me:he is so hot layla i can't even i wanted to jump hi bones already

She laughs and sips on her tea

Her:i know right ,I think we should just tell him and let him make his choice

Me:no , no we i have done this before and we needed up fighting so let's let happen organically

Her:oh come on can't we just i dont one

Me:layla this situation is already weird as it ,so don't push it

We heard footsteps and he came down the stairs shirtless

Him:thank you very much for waking me up

Layla:Sarcastic much

He laughed

Him:you could have woken me up am not even at my place

Me:it's okay since the parents went rouge we have been alone ever since

Him:would've been weird if your dad was here , I don't really like your old men

Kayla gave him coffee and he sat next to me

Me:so no work today

Him:perks of being the CEO but I am going later today

We had our beverages and he went back upstairs upstairs and he left soon after that,the cleaners came

and we also got ready to go to work , Mike does not play, he has people watching us all the time , am just glad that there holidays are fast approaching us then all this nonsense of waking up will end

Lol i can't stop thinking about him.

BONTLE

Bussines is booming and i am doing really well ,so after Mike's boost i have been working on opening a new branch i am still planning all of that , I have also been taking online bussiness lessons just to broaden my skills and knowledge , my sister always says you can never learn to much And I am glad listen to her

But problem is that i missed my periods this months,I havent been able to go check or comfirm

I haven't noticed any body changes so I wonder why i havent gotten then yet ,what i know is that Jay is not ready to be a parent he is not Mike,he just started accepting being in a relationship ,putting being a father on top of that it's just going to put in a situation he is not ready for

And I on the other hand I am not sure about this whole being a mother thing I am not a naturer like my sister , I have to confirm this i just hope i am not pregnant I will not be able to do this .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 52

ZWELI

Aphiwe is driving me crazy now, I haven't seen her in 2 days ,she is mad that i blew her head off the other day , but i was stressed and i didn't mean to snap at her , see why i never had a girlfriend

I call her

Phone call

Me:haibo kodwa makhumalo are you really mad at me

Phiwe: don't you dare Zweli you just snapped me for no reason,I am not your punching bag that you just can yell at

Me:phiwe baby I said sorry moss baby

Her:hato don't baby wam me

Me:yhuuu hai fine then nxa shoot a man for trying to apologise

Her:FUCK off Zweli i don't dance to your tune mna

Me:rise yiur vouce at me one more time aphiwe ,raise it i swear I will slap some respect into

Her:.....

Me:don't lock that stupid door am on my way

I hanged up soon after that and drove to her place ,the festive season is approaching and she can't be mad at me yhoo hee

I tried open I g but it was locked , ngiya'lingwa la

Me:makhumalo please open the door , I will kick it down

I said camly

I haerd shuffling and the door opened ,she was in her slick pj shorts with just her sports bra

Me:Baby

She folded her arms a d muted her lips ,I pulled her by her waist a d her folded arms hut my chest a bit and i was leaning on the door frame

Me:Baby i said i was sorry , i just didn't like the tone you were using to speak with me

I kissed her and she didn't stop me , I carried her and closed the door with my leg ,she wrapped her hands around my arms and pecked my lips

Her:Zweli please work on your anger i can't be scared that my boyfriend is visiting me and expect you to blow my head off.

Me:i promise i will okay

Her: please i love you way to much to be scared if you, and am scared if you lay your hands on me that I won't be able to leave you but I won't let you abuse me

Her words hit hard , I never want to be my dad he used to be abusive towards my mom so I don't want those problems

Me: i promise i won'tso are you leaving for the festive season

Her: no

I let her go and we go sit on her bed but she sits on my lap

Me: what did you tell them

Her: the truth

I narrow my eyes at her

Her: I just left you out of it sweetie

I laugh and she straddles herself on me and positions herself on me just well enough for my dick to start awakening

Me: babe , were always having sex online you for that.

She giggles and starts grinding on me a bit , and she starts moaning while were kissing

Her:and the only reason we go raw so that am on the pill

Me:and i don't mind that

She giggles and i quickly flip her and i am now on top of her ,what i have noticed about my girl is that she enjoys sex just as much as i do,and No i am not using her I do actually love her I am not just using her .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

She has her head no my chest and our legs are intertwined under the sheets

Her:i have to stop allow you pounding on me like that

Me:yeah but that's the best part about our sex life baby i do whatever i want and you let me

She giggles

Her:mxm only because i like it baby

I laugh and unintentionally say....

Me:i love you

She lifts her chest and i we her smiling

Me:what aphiwe

Her:Zweli you have never siad that before

Me:say what !!?

She playfully huts my chest

Her:don't play stupid baby you said you love me

Me:yes I did so what the problem

She giggles and does her happy dance inside

Her:i love you to Dlamini

I pull her a bit closer to me and brush her hair

Me:i love you to makhumalo

She giggles

Her:but please watch your anger issues

Me:i promise i will watch my to be with you baby

We snuggle up and continue talking and laughing ,
after my sister She is my peace lo.

Following Day

MIKE

I hate shopping so much but no madam here said I
made her pregnant so I will endure the maternity

shopping she has to do ,what funny is that the clothes she is buying don't look like maternity at all but she has been fitting and they do fit her

She is now fitting this black dress that has a low back and it exposes her back

Me:oh yeah you should save that for fate night my love

Her:you think baby

She looked so sexy , she so lucky she has that body..... I have seen pregnant people okay my baby so highly blesses and favoured

Me:yes you look so sexy

She giggles and goes back to the fitting room thank god that was her last dress

The manager comes strut g her stuff and hands me mg second glass of champagne

Mgr:Mr Anderson ,is tberre anything that I can help you with ,anything at all

I laugh nervously because i know fifi is annoyed AF right now and i don't want her to whip my ass again no thank you

Me:no I am fine just waiting on my FIANCE

She rolls her eyes

Mgr:okay sir .

She hands me her bussines card

Mgr:call me

She waltz awayThis bitch

Fifi walks out and we take all the clothes that she wants and we go to the register and the lady manager is there ,why the hell is she everywhere , I pay her for her clothes and she snatches the card from

Her:Flirt with my man again honey,I will close this store down ,trust me I can

Oh fuck

She pulls me by my hand and am just turned on by how jealous she is

We shopped more and did groceries for our Christmas lunch ,we did some baby shopping because well mama is obsessed and we don't even know the gender yet

We are driving back home and she is biting in her nails ,right there I knew something was wrong

Me:talk with your fiancee baby

Her:i am I possessive women babe

Me:what baby,I love that shit

She laughs and shakes her head

Her:well I don't,she may be dead but the insecurities are still there ,I am like this because you cheated on me and i am still scared that you will donut agai one day

She looks outside the window

Me:am so sorry my love

She nods

Her:i know you are and i forgave you a ling time ago ,your hot and you have money women are always going to throw themselves at you, I just need to better control my jealousy that's all

I hate that I did this to her

We drive in silence and soon after we arrive at home,and she starts cooking and i go sit her on the counter , pregnancy looks good on her if I am honest

Me:how do I fix it ,how do i make it better baby

Her:that's the thing babe you can't fix it ,it's something am going to have to deal with , you continue to love me and j need to belive that I am enough for you

I sigh

Me:i hate that I did this

She let's out a soft laugh

Her:it's life baby there is nothing we can do about it

Me:but it's something i could have prevented babe and i hate that I let myself forget that I had you and you love me unconditionally

Her:but my baby don't worry we will pass its just a phase okay

She stands between my legs and the i kiss her forehead,she then lays her head on my chest while the pots simmer.

MENZI

I decided to go to the new office we just opened , I just needed to catch up on some work and contracts , I love my job but boy it's a lot sometimes

My mind has been going back to when j was with the twins,I don't knw whay but I have this extreme attraction but here whats weird ,I have an extreme attraction to both if them , by now I have been able to tell them apart and yeses they drive me crazy ,I don't know what the hell is happening with me

I have been in here for 2 hours and i am wrapping up and there is a knock

Me:come in

Layla walks in with the biggest smile on her face

Me: i see you 2 times in one week whats happening

Her:well I missed you

She walks to my table and leans on the table and looks at me seductively

Me:layla sweetie what do you want

She comes and sits on my lap and pecks my lips

Her:don't act stupid Menzi you know like you and call me stupid but I know you like me too

She goes for a full blown kiss and i respond too ,the shivers i felt were out of this world

She straddled me on the chair and was grinding on me

Me:oh my god layla

Her:i know you want me Baby please let me have you

I held on to her ass and she wrapped her hands around my neck and the kissing continued for quite sometime

.

.

.

.

Her:i am going to have you one day

Me:yes but one day not now

I say as i am buckling my belt she just gave me one of

the best head ever

She fixes her dress and chuckles

Her:my sister likes you too you know

Me:really

She chuckles

Her:don't play dump ,I don't mind that She likes you we have shared a men before and we do it just fine

I choke on my saliva

Her:see you have thought of it

She packs my lips , takes her a long bag and my brief case and holds my hand and we walk out of the office hand in hand

Me:it's weird right

Her:i have shared everything with Kayla,am used it now,if you love us both like we do then why not ,we haven't always shared boyfriends but we have once or twice and we didn't mind,but they used us ,if your genuine like i think you are,were not gonna have a problem okay

I don't answer, she kisses me then walks back to be car and drives off

Okay what the fuck just happned

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 53

MIKE

I didn't know the pain and insecurities i had caused with my stupid cheating ways ,I don't know how it fix it because fifi is very closed off and can easily shut someone out after our talk yesterday she went back to being her normal self but that does not convince me because i know it's just a facade and i need her real raw emotions but am glad she is taking therapy by herself

I am having a lunch with my boys i haven't seen them in such a long time,I cut them off a but like i needed space from them

I arrived at the resturant and see them and immediatly go to them

Me:boys

I say as i sit and they laugh

Paul:you will never change will you

Me:i see no wrong

We laugh and i see that they ordered me a drink

Brad:man ,you got shot and we heard from Justin,what's up with you

Me:you haven't been here for me to tell so what's with you

Brad:oh we have been meaning to tell you something

Paul:yeah we do actually

Just then Zweli and Menzi walked in and they noticed me ,knowing Zweli he pulled Menzi to come to us

Zweli:Bafo ,it's been a while

I greeted them then introduced them to brad and Paul and they fist bumped

Me: Zweli did you apologise to tour girl

Menzi:yep and he got laid after that

Me:men be glad your girl is not crazy like mi....

Shit the crazy girl is their sister and they gave me death stares

Me:sheesh am joking

Paul and Brad somewhat annoyed at their presence i don't care i enjoy their company and they should stop being stuck up

Paul:yeah I think we should go

Brad:we have to pack anyway

Me:pack!!?? Where are you off to

Brad:were going to Colombia for some time and we not really sure when where coming back

Me:oh okay ,I will keep tabs on you

Brad: don't

They left !!!?? That was weird right am not just imagining thing

Menzi:well that was awkward

They saw it too

Zweli:yea yeah whateverhow is my sister doing

Me:she is good ,when.i left she was going to her therapy session

Menzi shook her head and luaghed

Menzi:you really did a number on my sister hey.

Me:mcm hay futsek man

They laughed and i saw Menzi drift of a bit.

Me:women problems

Zweli laughed again He couldn't stop laughing and had tears

Zweli:she has two problems you mean

Me:hey you finally getting some action

Menzi:hey man it's not that easy , I love two women at the same time

Zweli continued laughing

Me:Zweli stop laughing man....continue

She vaguely explained his situation a d man has some problems who the heck falls in live with sisters,at the same time and wants to be with them together .

Me:yeah sort that out who do you love more maybe?

He sighed and put his face on his hands with his elbows on the table

Zweli:he is losing his mind,he loves them ,maybe we should meet them and help you out

Menzi:No

He said abruptly

Me:o-kay

Menzi:i will.sort this out myself Okay i don't you guys confusing me

Zweli and i laughed again

Me:please dude you are already confused

He shock his head in disbelief at how Zweli and i are making fun of him.....his phone rung and he answered

Menzi:yes.....no I am of the office ... no don't worry i will see you laterokay fine you can come over I will tell you the time

He hanged up and he sighed loudly and we laughed again

I settled the bill and we went our separate ways ,I laugh at Menzi like my relationship is perfect when i infact ruined it

I have to do something something for her .

REFILWE

I just got to my therapist office and he went out to get us water because i requested lime water

I am sitting on the couch with my legs crossed and folded arms , he came in and sat down , God he is so hot , he has dimples that's my weakness,he has fair caramel skin tone ,very well built and he has eyes you can just stare in and just forget your problems.....oh my god I am gwaking at the men wow.

Him:okay I see you clearly didn't hear anything j said

I chuckled and apologise to him

Me:oh am sorry you were saying.

Him:i said my name is DR Mpumi khumalo and i will be working with you

Me:am so sorry doctor i just have a lot in my mind

He takes his note pad and instructs me to relax, I laid my dropped my head and laid my head on the couch and closed my eyes

Him:okay tell me your reason for being here

Me:uggh where do I start really

I explain to him everything about my relationship and all the problems that having been slowly occurring after his cheating ways

Him:so did you forgive him

Me:i did i really did forgive him it's just that when he leaves alone i question where he is going ,he is well off and looks good and that scares me sometimesI know he loves me don't get me wrong it's just that wow I have grown so insecure especially now that I am pregnant

I didn't even realise i was crying until i noticed he was

handing me tissue

Me:oh thank

Him:so the problem here is not your man but you and usually we tend to take unresolved past problems and carry them to our current situation ,how was your last relationship

I scoffed

Me:it was abusive ,in every way ,emotional,physically ,and sexual,he never regarded my feelings at all and he thought he owned me , he never asked for anything he took took took ,he was able to make me feel worthless and he had a way of controlling me that even after some time he had this way of creeping into my mind

Him:did you ever deal with him at all

Me:i see

He write on his note pad

Him:your new man how does he treat you .

A smile creeped on my face

Me:he is wonderful ,makes me feel like i am the only important thing in the world ,he runs a multi-billion company but yet i never miss hi presences ,he has his faults lime when he cheated but he has made sure that I don't feel like i am unworthy

I chuckle

Me:am making sense

Him:don't worry your smile say it all

Him:you know what that let's when it there , I uncovered a lot about the root of your problems so at this point i am good for this week

Me:okay that's good I have to head home anyway

Then my phone rang

Me:you don't mind if I answer

He nodded

Phone call

Me:babe

Him:huuuuuh babe when are you coming home

Me:i just wrapped up my session

Him:should i pick you up

Me:nah that's what an uber is far

He exhaled

Him:baby i miss you please hurry and we really need to teach you how to drive

Me:okay okay am carrying the baby here not you,you don't get to sulk

He laughed

Him:okay okay hurry

I hanged up and got up

Him:see you next week ,we will organize the day

Me:will do

He gave me his bussiness card and wakes me to the exit talking about this and that

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

I just got homeI walked in and they were roses and candles everywhere,I looked and there was a little spa set up

I got excited immediatly yoh ,after admiring the beauty,I saw him coming down the stairs with the biggest smile ever ,he had on his grey track pants and no shirt on

Him:hey baby

I ran to him and wrapped my legs around his waist and he held me careful not to squash my baby bump

Me:i love you

I kissed him all over his face and i got off him and he led me to the massage chair

Him:okay baby get naked.

I laughed and did as i was told,thank God we haven't hired any staff because the things they would see

I sat and he took a little stool and he sat and massaged my feet with oils and whatever else he was using

Me:hmmmm

He chuckled

Him:okay if you want me to continue to massage and not pound on you , stop making sounds like that

I chuckled but I couldn't help it , he continued after he carried me to the massage bench and massaged me but his hands obviously ended playing with my nuna and hayke i couldn't help it

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

He got off me after two rounds

Me:that was good baby Jesus but kniw i can't feel my legs

He laughed and carried me upstairs and we had our shower and settled on our bed

I had my head on his chest listnening to his heart beat

Him:how was your session today

Me:it was good that guy just doesn't say much you just end up spilling your guys to him

Him:i still don't like that he is a guy

Me:baby he comes highly recommended okay so put your little jealousy and put in your little pocket and save my baby

He laughed

Him:hai okay

Me:yoooooh whoever taught you "hai" I should go murder them

He uses that little word a lot now

Him:oksalayo babe

He said it funny ,this had Zweli all over it , he always teaches him words to annoy me and it works all the

time .

MENZI

So after the visit i got from layla I haven't been able to fully process all this to make it worse Kayla was at home when i got there and well it got anliuyle frisky it's like they planned this whole thing , I have been able to talk with them separately and i don't know man it's some thing about them that I can't help but be drawn them together .

Kayla is coming over today at my office and i don't know what to expect when it comes to them I am always nervous

After a few minutes later my door opened a d there she was,she had on a long black dress with a slit on the side and black shoes

Me:you loom good

She comes and sits on my lap

Her: i aim to please

I shake my head and she lays her head on my shoulder

Me:so how was your day babe

Her:it was good now that Mike is not going to the office everyday we don't have a slave driver

I chuckle

Me:you really don't like working don't you

Her:blame all that to my family they lawyer gave us what we wanted

Me:yeah but now he is really forvingnyiu to work

Her:yeah ,but I didn't come here to talk about that

She kissed my neck

Me:you kniw we have to talk about this

Her:what's there to talk abiut ,you want us we want you too , we don't mind so babybwhats the problem.

Me:well the first is that my sister is marrying your brother

Her:don't act like you care about thatand?

I laughed because i really don't

Me:Mike is going to kill us

Her:we can tell Mike later can you just relax please

She straddled me and out her forehead on mine and whispered nothing but sweet things to me

Me:don't do that

She started grinding on me

Her:don't fight it Menzi you won't win ,when we get married one day people are gonna talk but who gives a damn right .

Me:yeah but we really have to get togther and talk about this

Her:okay will you stop talking now

I pecked her forehead

Me: am not sleeping with want her of you until we talk

She sighed and we kissed and talked for the longest time , I AM IN DEEP SHIT and i don't know if I want to stop this .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 54

3 days later

I finnalh had my lunch with the twins and to be honest , I didn't think i would be able to handle this but now know I can, we just need to be careful for the time being not to be busted we still need to figure this whole thing out , all I need to do is make time for them separately and make sure that they do not feel unwanted both of them , i know am crazy right but

who has a rule manual when it comes to love and feelings mara.

I decided not to go to work today and my brother is also around, I tell him about my relationship but I leave certain things out, my father's wife finally decided to move out, I don't even care why.

Am having my lunch my Zweli comes in.

Him: you have been busy lately that you don't even have time for your brother

He says and takes a piece in my plate

Me: yeah juggling work and women is not easy at all
bafo

He laughs

Him: especially two women, why don't you think you can son that kodwa ...it's almost Christmas I want to see them

Me: FUCK no Zweli you will meet them when I'm good and ready for now we're still working on things

Him: mhhh

I change the topic real fast

Me: so how is it running the operations

He chuckles

Him:it's good yaz ,I was broody when Mike told us ,I thought he was going to be bossy and be all up in my ass but he is not he just let me do my thing with a few of his ideas ,we work well together

Me:that guy is something else , I can't believe he took over just like that but still humble

Him:yeah , but i don't mind him anymore you do see how happy our sister is

See thing with Zweli he acts all macho but he is a teddy bear shame

Me:she is happyAm just glad where moving on from the drama u'baba caused

Him:me too, it's just to bad he had to take along Khanyoanyway i have to check on aphiwe she says she needs attention yho

I laughed and continue eadying and he leaves the room

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Am having a date with Layla but in my office like always we don't want any unpleasant surprises ,she walks in she is wearing a red latex dress and black high heels with a pony tail ,she is so sexy

Me:Jesus

She giggles

Her:hi baby

She sits and puts down her sling bag

Her:you look good today

She leans in and i peck her lips over the table

Her:you look tense whats wrong

She stands and goes behind my chair and massaged my shoulder and i just relax

Me:your brother is going to break my bones

She laughs a bit but not letting go of my shoulders

Her:he is not gonna like the idea at first but he is 11 years older to your sister who judged him

I shrugged my shoulders

Me:but it's nothing compared to our situation , your sisters twins and i happens to love you both

She stops a bit and i open my eyes to look at her

Her:you really do don't you

I nod in agreement

Me:he can break my bones but leaving you guys it's not an option

She continues

Her:i see what you mean , when we're good and ready to tell him,we will do it together all three of us to make him understand

Me:we should make sure his gun is no where in sight

She laughs and comes to sit on my lap and i hold her waist

Her:Better lets make it public so he doesn't get ideas

We laugh and i she trails her finger on my face

Me:what you thinking about

Her:i don't mind the sharing and whatever ,but somtimes I do wish you were mine alone

Me:it's not ideal is it

She nods

Her:am just grateful when i am with you,you make it about me

Me:and i will never change that okay

She nods and kisses me and i kiss her back

Me:i don't like this latex dress look now you can't even open your Legs for me

She let's out a giggle

Her:but I can do other things

She whispers in my ears and goes down on her knees and unbuckled my belt , pulled my zipper down and took out u'jama and he was already excited ,she held on to my balls and licked and then put it inside her mouth and did all the wonders that made me nut inside of her mouth ,fuck she swallowed

I was still recovering and she sat on my thugs again to kiss me

Me:the things am going to do to you layla , I swear your going to forget your name

She laughs

Her:i can't wait and when is it ,am always so horny and wet around you

Me: soon baby soon

We continue kissing

I love this.

BONTLE

So remember how i thought I was pregnant but not sure ,it turns out that I am pregnant ,when the test came out positive and the doctor then confirmed i lost my senses a bitAm not gonna lie the thought of abortion has come across my mind a couple of times but I don't know I just can't , I know Justin would sure hate me if I were to take that decision for him

I talked to my sister and she was so happy ,i made her swear nit to tell anybody and she did and unlike me her men is ready to settle down and marry her ,Justin and i to talk marriage and kids but in a bit of distant future that is why i am hesitating wether i should tell her or not

Him : your doing that thing again

Me:what thing

Him:your in your head thinking provably abiut is , jump into co inclusion and were going to fight about it

Yes I am guilty of doing that

Me:No i am just thinking about my sister and her birthdayI don't know what to get her

Him:oh yeah i heard Mike talking about that

Me:it's not fair she gets gifts on her birthday and on Christmas

He laughs

Him:i guess she is lucky like that

Me:are still having lunch at their place at Christmas

Him:yes we are going ,I think we should get them gifts

I exhaled

Me:that's going to be a challenge

He laughed

Him:what is that babe

Me:what do you get people that have everything , Mike gets my sister everything she needs

Him:well then let a go for something sentimental

My mind drifted of to my pregnancy again , I really think maybe I should tell him on Christmas when his spirits are high

I should leave plenty of room for disappointment because as much as he loves me , I know he is not ready to start a family , I know that shame

Him:baby man

Me:am sorry am sorry

Him:whatever it is you better tell me okay soon because i can see that is eating you up

I gave him a forced smile

Him:don't fuck with me bee

Me:okay fine i will tell you soon though

He sighed and kisses my forehead

Him:you better

Thank god am only a month pregnant and i am not showing just yet

MIKE

my baby's birthday is approaching soon and i don't know what to get her , I mean I have to go all out for her , oh and her father is out the country since the house is being renovated so I decided to send him on a holiday and he appreciated it but now I can't use him as a parents for my girl

I am going to have to wreck my brain for this .

She has been going to therapy lately and her communication skills have improved ,she has been able to better tell me how she feels and stuff like that and i am really happy about that

She is going to her therapy session now and i am taking her

Me:so is that doctor pretty boy

She laughs and nods ,I forgot to mention i don't like her doctor

Her:i don't have time for your shenanigans baby

Me: oh am just saying , he likes smiling a lot doesn't he

I say that because he in now looking to our direction but he can't see us because if my dimmed Windows

Her:baby stop it

I get off the car and help her out the car and walk inside the building soon the doctor and the lady he was with walk in to

We introduce and all that

Me:i will come and pick you up am going to the mall to get something to eat

Her:okay please get something too Okay

Unpack her lips and she giggles and they go to the office,he was walking behind her and dude is checking my women out ,it better be my imagination because help me god I will not be responsible for my actions .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

.

I was waiting for my order and going through baby nurseries , I want to start getting the baby room ready i know she is 3months and 2 weeks pregnant but one can never be to ready right

If it's a boy am going baby blues and a little toys but if it's a girl am going princess mode all Cinderella and sleeping beauty shit

Voice:your order is ready sir , her is the bill

The waiter disturbs me

I look up to take the order and oh my god I didn't expect this

Me:Emily

I say shocked

Em:oh hey Mike

She says looking embarrassed as hell , wow life will humble you yoh

Me:thanks for my order

I made it quick because i saw how embarrassed she looked,i paid and left

I got a text from fifi saying she is already done ,the session didn't take that long

I drive there and i find her talking and laughing with the doctor,as soon as she saw me they said their goodbyes and she came in all smiles and i was frowning

Her:okay what now

She puts her bag down and exhaled

Me:i don't like that doctor of yours

We drove off

SOMEWHERE UNKNOWN

Where coming soon but not that soon

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 55

REFILWE

Mike is adamant that my doctor is hitting on me ,Dr Mpumi has been nothing but professional i do t get where he is getting his theories

Today I am having a home session with him ,Mike was supposed to go out with my brothers for lunch but as soon untold me "doctor pretty boy" (that's what he calls

him) is coming he has them coming here ,I have a weird fiance

I made sandwiches with mango juice (my fave thing now) and little bit of snacks i want him tk feel welcome because babe is not going to do that

Him:you don't have to do that you know ,this is not a social call he is here to work

Me:baby please jealous doenst look cute on you

He is not wearing his shirt but has black cargo shorts he is sitting on the high chair at the bar

Him:whatever am watching him

I go and give him a peck

Me:please try to be nice and wear a shirt he is going to be here in a few and make yourself scarce.....for now am going to take a shower

Okay I admit the guy is not, he has dreamy eyes but I love Mike and he is enough to me ,no men will ever compare to him ,I dare them to try but their going to fail

I took a quick shower and positioned and wore Mike's shirt with my undergarments,and i wore my sleeper boots and covered myself with a fleece ,it's a but chilly that's why.

I got downstairs and my brothers are here already having drinks

Me:okay you know it's only 11am right

I say as i am getting of the stairs

Menzi:it 11pm somewhere sis

I chuckle and i give them hugs

Mike:what's that

I look around

Me:what baby

I say as i shrug my shoulders

Zweli: he means what are you wearing, phela i heard your doctor is a men i think that needs to change

I sigh loudly

Me:Not you too

The gate buzzer buzzes ,I unlock the gate and look at them three

Me:Be nice please , he is fixing your mess Mike

My brothers bust out laughing leaving Mike speechless

I go and open the door and i immediately realise that what i am wearing is not appropriate so I excuse myself

I wear one of of my shorts ,but girl has a baby bump so i don't button it, I just laugh at my thought

I go bsck downstairs and they are just staring at the poor guy

Me:please excuse us

I am looking at them and they all mumble something

Me:what did you say

They all go to his study

Me:thought so

I settle on the couch that is in front of him

Me:am sorry about that

He laughs nervously

Him:i didn't realise that Mike Anderson is yiur fiance

Me:i thought you saw him yesterday

Him:yeah but was not really looking at him

We get start with our session and everything was going well ,we spike about Mr Dlamini and the hate and anger i feel towards him ,I spoke about my birth mother and how i am still yearning for a mothers love

After the session ,I had hiccups from all the crying , the boys came out laughing in the study ,Mike was the first to notice the red and puffy eyes and he came to sit next to me

Mike:are you okay

I just nodded Menzi hugged me from behind the couch and Zweli pushed Mike and sat next to me

Mpumi:it's good to see that you have a support system

Me:i am very lucky aren't I

I wipe the rest of my tears

Menzi:hai man try not to make her cry ,she is carrying my niece or nephew phela

Mpumi:it's never the intention but when it happens , I have no control over it.....ease walk me out

He says addressing me ,causing all the boys to shoot their eyebrows up

Zweli:why o ngai'sphumeli kanti wena

Menzi:there the door we will buzz you out

Me:yoh ni'rudelet me walk yoh out

We stood up opned the door ,he gave me a hug and left

Mike:so tell me who hugs a patient

They are all sitting in a 3 seater couch

I just walk to the kitchen and start preparing dinner for all of that plus bontle and justin are coming over , I make sure that I cook turkey , she says it's her craze at this moment,I don't know why she is not telling Justin that she is pregnant

.

.

.

.

.

.

..

.

I also invited aphiwe and the twins i missed my friends yoh hee

Were already digging in and taking abiut everything

Jay:so who will be cooking for the Christmas lunch

Mike:definalty not my women she is pregnant

We all laugh

Layla: she is not crippled Mike let her be and we will also be helping

Phiwe:yeah I will help too

Menzi:And then wena why are you inviting yourself

I didn't mean to laugh but I did ,Zweli gave him a look

Zweli:don't mind him baby he is just jealous he can't invite his GIRLFRIENDS over

Menzi and the twins choke on their drinks

Me:what do you mean girlfriends

Mike starts laughing

Bee:okay now I am interested spill Zweli

Jay:hurry up men

Mike:he is dating sisters

Us:WHAT!!!!

zweli: yes he says that he loves them both

We all just start laughingafter the laughs dies down

Kayla:it's happens you know

Mike:i would kill you too and the guy your dating shame

Menzi:it happend now move on please I don't like discussing my love life

Phiwe:i need to see them

Me:who are they

Bee:do we know them

Me:phendula hao Menzi

He sipped on his drink , tjo this guy 2 whole sister nje

Kayla changes the topic first chance she gets

Kayla:so when are you popping out

Mike:it's still a while ,I can't wait to meet princess

Me:oh no it better be a boy

Jay:yeah I want a girl

Bee:time frame

Jay:i still have to marry you baby

Zweli:mina i don't care,I want a baby next year

Phiwe:haibo Zweli ,don't say that

Mike:wena your full of nonsense Zweli

We all continue talking about family planning our Christmas and New years , Zweli and aphiwe were the first ones to leave ,followed by Jay and bontle

Menzi left and hour later and the twins helped me with the dishes before they left too

We went to bed and i was completely exhausted , he was spooning me

Me:baby please be nice to my doctor

Him:okay

I know he doesn't mean it

MENZI

Kayla had to go to see her friend so layla came home with me,since vele Zweli went to aphiwe's place .

Her:God this house is beautiful babe

Me:yeah to bad it bares bad memories only

She comes and wraps her hands on my neck and pecks me lips

Her:Kayla was complaining that I spend way more time with you

I just laugh because i don't want to say really

Me:i will make time for her ,come with me

I don't any mistakes do I take her to my room and i lock the door

Her:your room needs life its so dark

Me:i like it this way

She throws herself on the bed

Me:Layla stop seducing me please

Her:oh please babe am so horny

Trust Layal to be blunt with you

Me:baby we talked about thi after the tests and everything , we will start being intimate

Her:i trust you

She takes off her dress and comes to me ,I have no choice but to hold on to her waist

Me:you don't listen do you

She proceeds to kiss me and i kiss back ,the kiss is nothing but heated and passionate and sensual ,I carry her by her ass and sit down for her to straddle me

Me:you have no chill

She giggles and starts grinding on me and i feel my erection growing and I geuss she felt that because she started moaning and that was it for me

I carried her and flipped her over a d I was now on top of her ,she helped me take off my shirt and my pants

Her:oh god its big

I chuckled and pulled closely to the edge on the bed and took off her thong and I ate her like my life depends on her moans drove me crazy, while I was eating her up, I had my hands on her breasts and she was holding on to my head, her orgasm built up and she exploded on my mouth

Her:mhhhh ahh fuck Menzi

I stood up and took off my Boxers and my erection sprung free

I inserted in her and my god I almost came the same time (hey it's been a while ohk) but I pulled out and inserted myself again, I pounded in her with her legs up in the air moaning like crazy

I made her sit on me and to say the girl has skills would be an understatement, she was riding I couldn't even keep my eyes open but I was holding on to her ass, I love it because it fits so perfectly in my arms.

Her:baby, baby am coming ahhhhh

She did because I felt her juices covering me but that didn't stop me from thrusting into her till I felled her with inside

Her:okay shit way to rip a person apart babe

I laughed as she was laying on my chest were both panting for air

Me: pull the covers and let's sleep

Were both tired we just slept like that after pulling the
fleece on us

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 56

BONTLE

i am telling him today ,I can't bear this by myself and if
he reacts some type of way I will leave Him,i have a
bussines that is doing well so I will take care of myslef

He just came home , and he is taking a shower ,and i
just made us dinner ,

He shouts from the barroom

Him:babe we don't have towels in here

Me:oh am sorry baby you can check in the drawer

Him:okay my love

I wish up for us after that ,I set he tabke i dim the lights
down is and and sit

I am bitting my nails so I must be really nervous ,he
comes in with his jean shorts but he is shirtless he sits

Him:you look nervous baby what's wrong

Me:i have something to tell you but promise me you won't freak

He squints his eyes

Him: bontle you didn't cheat on me right because i am not scared to kill someone

I laugh nervously

Me:it's not that baby it's mhhm

He moves from his chair , turns mine and kneels in front of me

Him :talk to me my love

Me :i know you said your not ready and that yoh don't want to settle down as of yet ,but we have sex and lots of it and sometimes we have been reckless and that's...

Be looks down a bit

Him:are you.....?

I nod ,be puts his head on my thighs breathing in and out ,okay now my tears are falling too

Him:l certainly didn't expect this babe , i am no where near ready to be a parent but

He raises his head to look at me

Him:but were together in this right ,and your right we were the one that were reckless

We both chuckle

Me:your not angry

He looks at me and smiles

Me:i would never dont that, I am the one that fucks you

I laugh i sometimes forget how stupid he gets

Him:okay we need to get a house, this apartment is beautiful but we need something homey ,we need to be able to baby proof ,wait how far long are you ?

Me: a month baby ,a month

He looks at me and smiles

Him:so am gonna be dad , seems like sex at the resturant

Me:let's keep to ourselves baby okay ,we don't want our baby knowing he /she was conceived at a public restroom

He laughs and shakes his head

Him:well this life thing is unpredictable right

I nod and he goes and sits and have our dinner while talking about this and that

APHIWE

I am visisting my brother today ,I miss him so much ,my parents and i are not close because they are so strict ,when i came to joburg to school I have only visited one or twice and i am glad my brother moved his practise to joburg 3 months ago

I just got to his house and i am really excited as i knock and he opens

Me:hey bro

Him:hey lil sis

I jump on him and give him a tight squeeze

Him:you have been scarce lately is there boyfriend that I should now about

I place myself on the floor and look at him and walk inside his house

Me:nosey as ever bhuti

Him : Aphiwe mtase ,I think i should know if you have a boyfriend and i have to see him

My god Zweli and my brother same room hell no not yet

Me:all in good time bro

We go to the kitchen and i pour juice for myself and sit on his counter

Me:so wena,when are you getting a girlfriend

He laughs

Him:yeah I have an eye in someone but it's complicated,she is taken

I laugh

Me:okay then when has that ever stopped bhuti wam

Him:yeah baby sis this time it's different I tell you

Me:what is it ?

Him: well she is married and pregnant

Me:okay then but knowing you you won't stop till you get her

He laughs

Him:hai aphiwe don't make me out to be a phycho please

We laugh and he gets a beer for himself

Me:okay then ,bhuti how is your practise gojng i havent gotten my allowance

He laughed again

Him :you like using people wena aphiwe but I am well off now so I will resume it and anyway how have you been surviving without money from me ,knowing mama and baba they haven't given you a cent

Me: i have been surviving wethu so it's no stress at all

Him:i feel bad that I haven't been able to help with anything

Me:like i said bro it's okay .

Him:but I have money for your tuition for next year

I sigh in relief

Me: thank you so much bro

I pull him in for a hug

Him:you know i got you

Me:i really appreciate it Mpumi

NARRATED (BRAD AND PAUL)

Brad and Paul really did move to Colombia but not for pure intentions , they are now working with a cartel to take down Mike .

They knew very well to do so They needed to get out of

south Africa to operate well ,they are working with one of the biggest king pins in Colombia to take him down .

They claim they are tired of being under the shadow of Mike Anderson ,will they be able to pull this off i mean they have always been worked for Mike not with him .

REFILWE

I am getting heavier by the minute ,but when i look at my tummy it's res not that big ,I am 3 months and 3 weeks preganst and i am heavy , my birthday is coming soon , I just want a chilled with my fiance that's my wish

My ring fits but barely because girl is get to g bigger and funny enough Mike loves it because my ass keeps getting bigger too , my abs faded away god if I am not a whale when i give birth it will be a surprise shame

Me:baby I can't find my dress

Oh did I mention I have gotten lazy too

Him:babe just look for another please my love am still in the shower

Me:ohk baby

I go to my closet and sit on the chair for a bit,and i decide go for a figure hugging off white knee high dress it's an off shoulders dress , I look at myself and my baby bump is showing and i sit to do my make up ,a go for a natural look ,thank god I have have my weave on and it's laid so I just curl it a bit and appy my red

lipstick

I didn't even notice that Mike is down he has on a black
jean ,black shirt and demin jeans be had on his rolex
watch a d I always put on mine

Him:I should always have you pregnant baby , you look
so good

Me:thanks my love you look good too baby

So were having a date night it's my pre birthday
celebration

When we done we take his Lamborghini truck and
drive off,we get to this fancy resturant and the
manager walks us to our table ,my any helps pulling
my chair and once am seated he sits too

Me:wow this so fancy

Him:yeah and we look the part

Me:you mean i look the part your in your jeans my love

He laughs

Him:the shade wow baby

We continue chatting about this and that you know our
baby ,wedding planning that i haven't started yet
because mo'guy has to pay magadi (lobola) first .

Him:we have a lot going for us don't we

Me:yes we do and i hope we continue striving like we have been

Him:it's you and I against the world my love

I blush ,I can't believe he still has the ability to make me blush like this

MENZI

My night with Layla was amazing ,the morning after she told me that she told Kayla and she was cool with it and honesty that was perfect for me

Today it's my day with Kayla but it still has to be in the office because yey i don't want to to be caught ,so the office it is

She comes in wearing bum short and a lace body suit and she has her sling bag on

Me:baby what the hell is that

Her:he to you too babe

She packs my lips then sits on the table and crosses her legs

Me:baby what are wearing

Her:No No be fair Layla had a latex dress on ,short dress

Me:it didn't show her butt cheeks

Her:okay fine babe

Me:what you think your gonna get off that easy

She looks at me

Me:yeah women where do you get off showing my ass like that

She laughs and i stand and spread her legs open and she gasp and smiles

Me:baby don't show off my assets please

Her:we always were sexy things

Me:yes but your cheek are showing

I pull her shorts off and kiss her as i pull her close to me and she grinds on me while she is on the table

Me:you don't get to control this baby

I whisper in her ear i take her if the table and turn her around and i hold her by the waist and raise her butt in the air a little bit , I drop my pants and finger her to make sure that she is wet and once one i know that she is I enter her fully in at one go

Her:FUCK

I pound on her with me in her fully ,I thrust in and out

off her with her holding on to the table

Her:oh my god Menzi ahhhh

That was her coming and i followed her soon after. I sit and she sits on top of me

Her:fuck that Menzi wow

I laugh

Her:i think am already addicted

Me:your crazy baby hell ,there is two of you and one of me

We laugh and she relaxes her head on my shoulder ,I open her legs again and once again I am inside her and she is riding me reverse cowgirl

I have the best life shame

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 57

BONTLE

Dad is coming from Paris today ,he called me before boarding his plane ,he is coming to visist and since vele it's the festive season and tomorrow it's refilewe

birthday , its all a surprise she think a dad can't make
oh and i also have news to tell them but I really don't
want to over shadow my sisters birthday so I think i
will tell them after the party ,or we should tell them
one by one mcm this all to confusing

The reaction i got from Jay was incerdible he gave just
gave me a reason to love him even more ,we might not
be ready but life always surprises you right

Me:L.J why didn't you tell me that I didn't stock
shampoo

He is one of my workers and proudly gay

Him:hai girl I told you yesterday but it seemed like you
were on your own world nje

Me:i had a lot in my mind but am okay nowI will
place the order okay

Him:okay babes

I walk back to my office and i place my order after that
I read my book on pregnancy , I love it because i am a
new parent.

After some time i get it work and i hear on knock

Her:hey sis

She says settling down

Me:baby sis

She laughs and places takeaways on the table and i immediatly salivate because the contents smell so good

Me:you read my mind hle thank you so much

Her:i mike but us being in the same house all day was just driving me crazy , but he went out with the boys

Me:i know the feelingso

She looks at me with a wingman her mouth causing me to laugh

Me:untold Jay last night

She give me the "and" look

Me:He was shocked as predicted but he was happy hle he didn't freak out

She stands and jogs to my side and side hugs me

Her:i knew he wouldn't disappoint but still had to leave some room for a little worry

Me:i am so relived sis i am able to can shame

We laugh ,she goes back and sits and we continue eating

Her:you know i love you right my favariot sister

Me:hee refilwe o batla eng (no refilwe what do you

want) and i am your only sister moss

She laughs

Her:i need this weave off me I miss my hair

Me:so?

Her:i don't have money with me

I laugh and look at her in disbelief

Me:your man is a whole billionaire but still a cheapskate

She laughs too and claps her hands once

Her:that how we stay rich big sis

We go into the salon and i give to zinhle and they content thing

A tall good looking gentlemen walks in as soon as she spits my sister he smiles like a regard and goes to her ,I get a but closer so I can hear what they talking about

Her:well it's weird seeing out of the office doc

He laughs and pulls a chair nearby

Him:well you look good as ever

She giggles ,wait why is she giggling

Her:well aren't you a flirt

She shakes her head

Him:well i try

Mxm i don't like this guy at all

Her:okay stop then my fiance does a very good job at completing me and besides your my therapist Mr be professional

Him:okay then let me go and i have my haircut

Her:yeah you need it

He laughs and goes

Me:Mike is going to lose it ,why are tiunflirting with another man

Her:i was not flirting bathong bamodimo bontle

Me:i have eyes ,wipe that smile off your face , and ko mmella Mike (am telling mike)

I walk off ,my sister has this thing off overlooking people when they use her and she never notices well am here i will lookout for her .

I get to the office and immediately call Mike

Phone call

Him:future sister in in law

Me:hey Mike,who is the doctor that has my sister by the balls

Him:what are talking about.

Me:therapist is busy flirting with your fiance watch out for him please ,my sister is being oblivious to the fact the he is

He sighs

Him:thanks for telling,when did this happen

Me:5minutes ago in the salon

Him:okay

He hangs up ,I had to do it,I know it was wrong but I had too.

REFILWE

After i got my hair done i didn't even wait for bontle to come back , I left and i met Mpumi in the parking lot so we just went to the closest coffee shop to have a talk

Me:so what do you do other than stalk me

He laughs

Him:hey hey i wasn't stalking you okay ,I needed a haircut mina

We laugh

Me:i have to get going before Mike blows my phone

Him:oh come on we just sat ,and i don't inhale friends
jehovah

Me:haibo your emotionally blackmailing me moss

Him:is it working

I laugh and shake my head

Me:okay fine 30 minutes then am going

Him:i will order you doughnuts

I giggle excitedly i love sweet things guys don't judge
me

After a few moments he comes and gives me the
doughnuts

Him:so tell me , are.sure you want to get married ,your
still so young and still studying

Me:yeah i know all that but I love my man witj
everything in me so I don't mind

Him:is he your first

Me:No,I am not as innocent as i look

He laughs

Him:i figured , I like chilling with you outside the office
it's nice

Me:yeah its cool we shou.....

Mike stare made me stop mid sentence

Me:i should go Mike's here to pick me up

He stood up and side hugged me , I tried settling the bill
but he said he got it it's fine (he is so nice shame),I
walked to Mike but he left me behind Shit .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

We got to the house and he still had not said anything
to me and i know he doesn't like Mpumi but he is cool
but I need to apologise

I changed into his shirt and went downstairs and sat on
his lap and unpacked his lips and he sighed in defeat

Me:am sorry babe really , he....

Him:your changing doctors i don't like him at all
,entrust i just don't trust him

Me:but baby am comfortable with him

Him:am not arguing with you my love it's your birthday tomorrow

Me:okay fine but we still going to talk about this

Him:am done talking

He carries to our room and this dude went all in ,what happend to being nice because am pregnant

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 58

Mpumi

Hey guys i am 28 years old and y'all know me as refile's therapist ,i didn't mean to fall for her okay ,but I did She is beautiful and she has this positive aura about her that just draws me to her ,when i saw that her fiance is Mike Anderson i swore to back off but every time I am around her i just cabt help myself , I have heard stories about the Mighty Anderson but I don't believe them , he is just a prominent bussiness man that everyone respects

I am meeting my sister for lunch today just to catch up ,she is the only family memeber i am close too , hence I decided to move my practise to joburg

I walk in the restaurant i spot her because she is being for me to see her , I quickly go to her and i sit and we order same time

Her: your all smiley bhuti is it going well with your your mystery girl

I laugh and shake my head

Me:i wish it was by ke i managed to have a little coffee date with her

She is the one laughing now

Her:did she know it was a date

Me:okay fine i chose to look at as if it's a date okay

Her:oh bhuti your handsome and successful why couldn't you just fall in love with a person they is available

Me:ask my heart and feeling aphiwe , I fall for her each and every time I see her wethu

She laughs and our order comes through and we start digging

Her:i should set you up with my friend Tumi and forget that girl of yours

Me:haibo aphiwe

Her:no man am serious just try , you did say she was

pregnant right

Me:yes ,yes she is pregnant.....maybe you are right i should back off

She chuckles and continue eating and her phone rings

Her:baby.....what now Zweli?.....am having lunch with my brother.....of course am coming to her birthday she is my best friend....., mxm whatevercan j come with him.....thanks baby.....i love you too

She puts down her phone and bites her bottom lip

Me:who the hell is Zweli

Her:my boyfriend, bhuti i am old enough to have a boyfriend so please.....oh and he agreed that I come through with you

I look at her and i really have nothing to do today so why not

Me:okay fine but only because i have nothing to do today

Her: No beacuse you have no social lifepay your getting me a dress it has to be fancy those people drip money okay so we have to look good

Me:oh he'll can i stay behind now

She laughs ,I pay the bill and we leave to find outfits

because i can't embarrass her by being to basic .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Were heading to the place of the party and i notice that I think i know where were going

Me:Aphiwe who is this friend of yours

Her:oh her name is refilewe , my bestfriendoh and she is getting married to the one and only Mike Anderson

I smile to myselfthat means i am going to have some time with her

Me:I didn't you had such frinds

Her:oh she is such a darling , the money didn't change her at all , yoh should see her ringmy girl scored big with him and the cherry on top is that they really love each other.

Me:hmm

J say because k really have nothing to say , we arrive at their house and Jesus I didn't notice how gorgeause this house is when i came here the first time

I whistle as i get out of the car

Her: yeah i know

Okay I am definalty now this rich ,yhuuu

We walk towards the door as we were about to ring the door bell ,the door opens ,aphiwe go of my hand and runs to hug the guy that just opened , the guy is staring at me and i recognise him because him and Mike were giving me a tough time

Her:baby this is my brother Mpumi and bhuti this is my man u'zweli

Zweli:i have seen him before

Her:what!!

Zweli:never mind that baby ,the twins need you ,bontle and refilewe are on their way and Mike is losing his shit inside , you one how he gets when things don't go his way when it comes to his FINIACE

He let's us in and his stare is intimidating me to be honest.

There is a up and down and i remeber today us her birthday,she w/o get her gudt during our session

My sister introduced me to everyone and they are all nice including the father

Mike:no no people no time for pleasantries my baby is co.....what's he doing here

Phiwe:Mike don't be rude this tight here is my brother

He give the brothers a what the hell look and they both shrug their shoulders

Mike:they are five minutes away hurry up

Everyone scuttles around for finishing touches and Mike's comes and grabs my hand and pulls me to the side

Mike:don't you were pull any stupid stunts i am looking at you all the time , don't even talk to her tonight

He then left , he must have lost his mind lo,the twins are hot to yoh,this house is full of sexy women shame

BRAD

I am not stupid ,I know who were going up against,I didn't want to do this but Mike changed on us ,soon as that bitch walked into her life We became less important

Were not gonna work back in south Africa hence were in Colombia, he does have an operation here but it's not as big to reach the far East were we are at

Paul has been working with some festive that hates Mike's guts , soon as we gather enough evidence against him he will be sent to prison and we get easy access to his operations

I didn't want to do this but he brought all to himself , he was fine with Emily but he chose love over his bestfreinds

I hope all off this shut doesn't backfire on us .

MIKE

I am not gonna let Him ruin my mood today is about my baby and i will deal with pest if I have too

This is not a surprise part because my stupid ass couldn't hide it from her but then again I can't really hide anything form her.

I just buzzed bontle in and we all gathered near the door , after a few moment the door opened and it was them

Us:happy birthday to you, happy birthday to you,happy birthday day dear fifi happy birthday to you

She looked very happy and relaxed and sexy yoh she had on a round neck short black velvet dress and her brown knee high boots , her simplicity makes her so hot

Me:happy birthday baby

Pa:oh my baby happy birthday

Everyone wished her a happy birthday and everything and she was genuinely happy and that made me happy

too

We were how have our food around the table,with
chatter here and there ,

Her:baby what is my therapist doing here

She whispered in my ear

Me:she is aphiwe's brother

She looked shocked , after our little dinner we moved
to the lounge there was music playing and i pulled to a
corner

Me:you look rest beautiful today babe

She blushed and kissed my cheek causing me to
blush(only she can do that okay)

Her:thanks my love

I didn't like how this Mpumi kept kn eyeing us ,well to
bad for him she is going to be next to my corner the
whole night

Me:how did you like your birthday dinner

Her:am glad you listened , I was not in the mood for a
huge crowd

Me:babe have you noticed something about my sisters

Okay gossip time

Her:looms like they are getting it

Me:yeah thanks baby like i needed that image in my head

She laughed and put her face on my chest and i kissed her hair (i know it's my thing don't judge)

Her :but really babe i think they both found boyfriends

She is still on on my chest

Me:i want to meet them I have to he them that

Her:will you relax ,they cn take care of themselves they don't need you all over their bussines

Me:well since my parents are dysfunctional i am the parent

She sighed

Her:your so strict am scared for my baby

I laugh

Phiwe:Hell no girl this is your party why arenyou standing there.

Mcm we went on to join the rest and it was now gift time ,she kept on saying that we didn't gave to but of course we did

Pa:i didn't know what to get you so instead of something expensive i went witj sentiment

He took out a photo from his paper bag ,it caused my baby to Cry immediatly ,we all know she is a daddies girl

Her:this was my first boxing lesson ,you kept on punching me tat i got angry i punched you and your tooth fell off

We all just out laughing

Jay:oh so she has always been a hot head

Menzi:she must take after Zweli moss

Zweli:you know that's right

Pa:you don't know the half of it lona

We laugh again

Phiwe:okay friend here

She hands her the hift bag but as soon as she tries to open aphiwe hits her hand

Fifi:ouch!!!! what now phiwe

Phiwe:that's for your honeymoon friend

The girls laugh and we the dudes are just left puzzled by the inside joke

Zweli and Menz gave her a pocket watch that was given to them by their grandfather and that also made her cry

Bee said she can do her hair for the year for free ,you should be seen her face but Jay hogged the gift causing us to laugh my brother will always e a cheapskate
Shame

After everything they all turned to look at me and i gave them the "what" look

Kayla:i pray your joking because yiur gonna die if your not

Bee:did you get your fiance a gift Mike

I laughed i mean who am i ?

I took her hand and made my way with her outside ,there it is baby I hought her an MERCEDES-AMG S63

Her:baby what is that

She said that jumping and down excitedly

They a came out and peeked

Layla:oh my fucken god

Them:Language

She turned to me and she was now crying

Zweli:yoh i need ride in that

We all went to check it out but she jumped on me and wrapped her legs on my waist and her hands on my neck and she hugged me while the others were admiring the car .

I hugged her back and i heard her sniffing

Her:am horny

I busted laughing causing everyone to look at us ,I just bought her a damn car and she is horny ,I love her

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 59

REFILWE

Our guests just left except for my dad he went on to sleep in one of the guest rooms ,I couldn't help it Mike and i just had a hot session , thank god for the sound proof rooms,Marcus would be proud

I am laying on my man's chest tracing his perfect body

Me:thank you baby it was a perfect day

Him:let a have a destination wedding

Wait what!!

Him:I talked to your dad ealier he said that he can get uncles and family to gather so I can pay your bride price but after lets have a destination wedding my love ,we fly our friends and family and just have a simple wedding

Me:you clearly have thought about this ,and in all honesty i have been procrastinating to start planning the wedding

Him:you see , and i want my baby to be born a Anderson so let's do it

I get on to of him and sit up on him while holding my baby bump

Me:let's do it my love ,you talk details with my dad and i will find a place, any suggestions

Him:i don't know

Me: i want something exotic and fun

Him:maybe Dubai, Japan, Greece

Her:No mexico my love

He looked at me

Him:why there ?

Me:i want a beach wedding , they have beautiful blue oceans and scenery to die for ,it's not to far my pregnant self can handle it

Him:well okay then

I kissed him

Me:your the best my love and am sorry

Him:what for baby

Me:i saw what your talking about, he is getting weird

Him:the therapist

I nod

Me:when I had coffee with him the other day ,he kept on questioning our relationship , and I think i have worked through most my problems so I don't need him anymore

He holds on to my waist because am still sitting on him

Him:thanks for seeing the light my love

Me:i think i should stop being so guilable

Him:no your not, you just like seeing the good in people that's all

Me:yeah still

I couldn't help but admire how gorgeous my ma is

Me:I love you so much it scares me sometimes

Him:you know before you, I had girls all the time different girls that is ,Emily was good for my image as my dad used to say ,soon as yoh were mine that all went out the window the gilrs , Emily and all that shit ,I hurt you and that brought you a whole lot of hurt and I will make sure that I prove that I love you till the end of time

Me:i know you love me , all I know is hurt , pain and discomfort, when i got my chance at happiness with you ,I was happy and i was comfortable with you ,you gave me that inch of happiness your the one that took it from me the one person that gave me happines you took from me and i hot scared and gaureded ,yet again you gave it back to Me, Mike I trust you so much please baby please don't break heart again I won't able to take it

Uhhh i hate crying

Him:am so sorry baby, I promise I won't i will try not too,I didn't realise the hurt and pain that I brought unto you . shit my love am so sorry.

I was now sobbing ,he got up and we hugged i burried my face on his shoulder

Me:I know am so sorry baby am really sorry. Really sorry.

I just nodded , I know he loves me and i know he would never hurt me at all ,I have to trust and believe that because i am going to tie my life onto his

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

I have been learning how to cook slowly but surely i don't want no women feeding my men mo never ,we have also hired 2 cleaning ladies they are in their late 30's and come in every Monday, Wednesday and Friday and today they are .

I just made breakfast nothing fancy just your sausage, pouched eggs ,and bacon and i had freshly squeezed mango and orange juice

Papa and Mike were outside dad said that he wanted to see Mike's car collection *rolls eyes*

I took out my phone and Mike so they can come and eat because i am done they came in after 5 mins butni was ready stuffing my fave with bacon

Mike:babe you couldn't even wait for us

Papa:don't say that Mike , do you wanna die

I just gave Mike a stare

They settled down and arrated eating when my dad

suddenly laughed

Papa:my baby when did you learn how to cook

Mike joined him in laughing at me that really annoyed me but I couldn't even say anything because my father is here

Mike: but papa she tries these days hey ,I don't eat burnt toast anymore

Papa:yeah I think i spoiled way to much.

Me:papa Mike has something he wants to tell you something

Papa: okay

Mike:so my baby here and i decided that we want to get married soon but then that means that we have to pay the bridal price sooner than we anticipated

My dad had the widest smile ever and he agreed of course and said he will start with the preparation for everything that meant that has to be going later today and that means he won't be here for Christmas with us , my lobala will be paid on the 26th and were gonna get married on the 31st

Me:i can't wait to be Mrs Anderson

Papa:oh my baby but you still finishing school

Mike:that's out of the question,and after that she is

going to shadowing her husband

We laugh

Me:yeah well that's after tour big headed baby Is grown

They laughed again

Mike:baby don't you were call my baby a big head

Me:you saw the scans

Papa laughed again

This is so good for me am really happy.

ZWELI

My life is bliss but the hiding is getting on my last nerve if I am honest but hey We just have to wait until were ready

Am at the office working this transfer has been a pain in my butt i have been working late night's,inued to cancel my date with Layla before my sisters birthday and she has been mad at me ever since.

I tired calling her this mornin g but she declined , see i enjoy both my time with the twins because they are so different , Kayla i sweet , open minded and overall the one that has more reasonable sense when it comes to the three of us ,Layla is sultry , sexy and funny , the three of us were well balanced and i love them both.

.

.
. .
. .
. .

3 hours later

I have working and going to meeting none stop , that I havent had the time to check my phone, I need a holiday seriously

I sat down after i don't know how long and turned my chair to look outside when I heard the door opening

Her:i don't like your receptionist she is rude

I smiled to myself that's Layla for you

Me:she has done noting to you baby

Her:don't baby me Menzi why didn't you call

Me:you declined my call didn't you

Her:yes.....yes I didn't but you were supposed to calm again and we need to get presents for the Christmas lunch at my brothers

Me:oh that

Her:don't fuck with me please

I turned my chair

Me:and don't speak to me like that okay

She nodded ,I stood up and went to her , I held her waist and kissed her

Me:how are baby

Her:i was at work most of the day and i came here straight after

Me:and the reason I did t call was because i had back to back meetings today it was not on purpose

She nodded ,I grabbed my things and we left the office for the mall

It took us 20 minutes to get there and we started getting gifts for everyone one ,after that we went or a restaurant but I asked for a private room .

Her:this is so refreshing

Me:i know come here come sit on daddy baby

She hurried and say on my lap

Her:it's do hard with your schedule, I missed you so much

I was busy brushing her ass

Me:i missed you too babe ,but if were gonna get married i need to work and be able to provide for you

She had the widest smile

Her:your gonna marry us

Me:yeah of course i am ,I don't any man looking you at
y'all your mine now

Her:you really turn me on when you are all possessive
my love

She is brushing my clean fade with her hand , we
talked about a whole lot of things and had stolen kisses
here there

After we had our dinner and then went home and i
decided to go to sleep

.
.

BRAD

Seems like taking down Mike is a whole lot harder
than we thought but Paul is hell bent in taking him
down , he says there is no way that all his evidence is
that destroyed

Were still plotting against him until i thought of a
better plan now were working that angle it's going to
be easier it's a risk but it's worth it ,were gojng to break
him i all ways possible and his love for that girl is going
to be his down fall

I love how brilliant i am when am not someone's

puppet but things with these Colombians were working with they want him dead and that's not likely possible because the men has protection better then the president.

MARCUS

The worst is happening thought my source was nlying to me but it is happening and i have to inform Mike so soon , I can't believe his friends are turning his back on him

My informat in Colombia told that they are coming for him , Mike's money and power has people are terrified of hi. And those who will do everythi h to take him down

Now they are going after fifi ,well big mistake on their part because we will see them coming from a mile i just have to inform Mike that we have to destroy all information that fifi killed that P.A those stupid boys were part of the mission since were still with us .

It's a mess fifi can't be arrested she is pregnant for fucks sake

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 60

MARCUS

I just go to their place and fifi is complaining that Mike said that she has is fat she has been throwing a fit since I got here and Mike has been trying to defuse the situation

Fifi:please Mike you said it admit it you called me fat ,can't belive you some times

She then hurries up the stairs and bangs their bedroom door and i finally bust out lauging ,he comes down the stairs

Him:it's not funny man

I continueaughing as he pours is whiskey with ice

Me:yeah it is,I can't wait for her to give birth then you sure gonna feel it

He just sighs and hands me the glass and i thank him

Me:we have to talk man

His expression changes a bit

Him:is it serious

Me:yeah it is serious man , your frinds brad and Paul they are going rouge

He chuckles

Him:yeah I know i just hate that I don't kniw what they a pla..... wait you you don't you

Me:yeah i do , I have one of my old friends that has been keeping me update with international affairs.

Him:oh this is great i have been working on getting guys that side but i have been crazy busy with everything and were preparing a Christmas lunch

Me:they after fifi man

His expression completely changed

Me:they tried going after you but couldn't gather any evidence ,but remember brad and Paul were part of helping fifi with killing and cleaning up after ward's am guessing that's how they got evidence

He threw the glass across the room

Me:they have gathered evidence that is going to get her in jail man ,I tried all your connection that you gave me whenever anyone of us are in trouble but they say mbatha is keeping his mouth shut , that man is in it for you man

Him: fifi can't go to prison man ,her father will kill me andFuck this man

He was pacing up and down

Him:do they have a warrant for her arrest yet

Me:no they are eating just after Christmas and then the judge will it

Him:orgainse a plan that will take her to Dubai SAPS or the government does not have any jurisdiction thereoh man no this cannot be happening not now man

Me: we have to take him out ,he can't be messing with us likehe have to take that whole cartel out they will fucken learn

Him:yeah we don't have a choice men ,baby mama is pregnant I can't let her be at risk

Me:should we begin and get everything ready

He just nodded you could see the wheels of his head turning

Him:get two jets ready and have my sisters , and bontle out of the country ,and the other one will be for us were going to Colombia

Me:is it safe I mean were going to their turf

He chuckled

Her:i own the damn world Marcus and it's high time people knew thatdeliver weapons and make sure we have 3/4choppers , we need to act faster than them

Dammit it's about to go down

I walked to the door and he stopped me before i could go out

Him:Marcus hurry men I need to get her out of here tomorrow night okay

I nod

Me:of course it's fifi man

MIKE

I don't how i didn't see this coming but I am not to late, couldn't they atleast wait for me to enjoy my holidays these bastards

Immediatly texted my sisters telling them to pack clothes and meet me at my house i told Jay to tell her that she also needs to pack I will explain later .

I get to our room and my baby is peaceful sleeping ,I need to declare dominance and show these mother fuckers that I will always be ready for them ,I can't have my baby be threatened over my dead body

I go and pack for her clothes,I just pack anything i see and i make sure I pack all off my buddies for her and 8 of my shirts i don't know how long this thing will last ,after packing i call one of my friends he owns a prestigious hotel and i need to do me a favour

Phone call

Me:ey Carlos how are you my man

Him:hey Anderson how are you men

Me: not good at all ,Colombia Maria's are coming for me
my i need to get my family to safety

Him: shit the damn Colombia's are traitors , so what do
you need

Me: I need your hotel but I want my family to be the
only guest's

Him: and lose money

Me: i will pay double your revenue

I hear him laugh

Him: of course you will ,okay just get them hear they
will find everything ready

Me: they coming tonight man

Him: fuck you man ,I will get everything ready then

Me: Good

And then I hanged up , and got her traveling
documents ready and decided to wake her up

Me: baby

I say shaking her

Me: babe wake please

I say kissing her face

Her:baby please let me sleep am so tired

Me:baby your gojng please wake

She exhaled so annoyed

Her:going whereI have to wake in a few and prepare tomorrow's lunch ,baby you can't be waking me like that baby ple..

Him:refilwe get off your bottom and get ready your leaving in two hours

She slapped me

Her:don't talk to me like thatand where am i going

I told her everything an i mean everything single detail and what i was planning

Her:what the hell Mike I don't want to be a fugitive baby what the hell is happening

She was now panicking and crying i ran to her and and hugged her from her behind

Me:it's going to be okay baby relax

Her:were supposed to be getting married baby what's this

Me:it's still going to happen okay plan everything ahead and pay people via eft okay we will get married i

promise it might not be in the date we planned but do it
okay my love

Her:it's not fair babe it's really not

Every tear she is dropping am going to cause havoc on
them because she is breaking down because of them ,
and that bloody mbatha he is going to get it before I
even get to Colombia

She eventually calmed down and her brothers said we
will all meet them at the airport just to save time

I can't believe I have to dance to their tune , well am
changing the tune and mine is going
to be a whole lot messy and bloodier,with a lot of
deaths and i will not be as gentle as i have been ,am
sick and tired of this bullshit of people thinking

BRAD

Things are going well , I have not seen anything that
shows us that he knows what's coming to Him,I just
want this bloody holiday to pass so that she can get
arrested,and already Paul is working on taking on his
cartel this side were meeting one of his main guys to
meet us tomorrow we hope that goes well because we
dont want a war to erupt at this moment we need
everything to go accordingly and i mean our way and
show that Mike Anderson he is not a God.

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 61

NARRATED

Refilwe and the girls madenut to their flight , even though she was uneasy she had full faith in her fiance and she asked Mike to take care of her dad make sure he has 24/7 surveillance

Menzi ,Zweli, Marcus, justin and Mike would all be working together. They didn't have time to torture this mbatha guy so he was killed and it was made to be seem like a car accident after that making all of fifi's evidence disappear was a peice if cake because wether they like it or not Mike is somewhat above the law ,let's not pretend like money doesn't make the world go round.

They had to prepare for Colombia which had already proved that it was going to be difficult, brad and Paul didn't manage to turn Mike's cartel against him so instead they went and recruited small Time gangs to expand their gang and make it stronger .

He made sure he flew some of his trusted guys over and but they didn't need numbers because Mike had jyst shipped new weapons from mother Russia, he had bombs , Groza's ,AUG , M16A64 , they had it all ,to be in the date side Mike made he oders a army tank .

They flew to Colombia which meant that the gilrs should be getting to Dubai soon ,they had a plan and if it works all of this shit would end but if it doesn't,shit is about to go down

War is about erupt hoping and praying for no casualties from his side because he is honestly tired of people trying to take him on , this should be an easy battle because they have the weaponry and that's what important.

They decided not to strike when they arrived because they needed the rest. So they slept at Mike's warehouse and also merged with his boys there.

NEXT MORNING

MIKE

I got a text from one of my pilots saying there plane to Dubai was delayed .

menzi:i think we should ambush your friends Mike, I heard one of the guys that

Sean:yeah boss i heard their are meeting at the coffee joint just downtown

Me:orgainse a bit on them but then we have to be ready for anything because they will know we have landed

Zweli:yeah ,I have for the guys to go surrounded the MARENO cartel any movement they will let us know

Jay:and i have had guys plant bombs surrounding them , they will do damage but you know anything is possible

Me: Mareno is smart okay don't underestimate him

Just then Marcus walk in all bloody we all wanted to look at him

Me:what the hell happened

Marc:i just caught one if Mareno guys lurking around , I chopped his ball of before killing him

We all laughed Marc is ruthless but he is a character

Me:okay boys round up

They knew what i meant by this ,it was so busy in the warehouse but eveyone had a task so it was organised chaos

Zwe:don't forget bulletproof vest

Marc:yes I don't need to get hit today

Menzi:yes I have two ladies i still need to please so please protect me by all means

Menzi thinks i am an idiot I saw him grabbing layla's butt at the birthday dinner am just not sure what the hell that means .

Everything was ready we just had to wait for mid-night to hit then we go blow up some warehouses

.
. .
.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

NARRATED

it was midnight and Mike and the gang were already in their G Wagons guns blazing , they had three warehouses to hit but the head of the operation was the MARENO cartel warehouse

They had all of the warehouses surrounded and Jay activated the bombs and when one went off it was then all guns blazing

By luckily they were the ones surrounding them so it was easy for them to see them coming

Mike decided that he needs to find Brad and Paul because they were not gonna get off that easy Menzi had him covered when he ran inside and what do you know They were trying to escape but bad luck for them Mike had already seen them and he shot them both on their legs and they fell .

As he was about to go for them two guys smeared and it turned into a fist fight ,they were the two of them so they hit him and hard ,they hit his head against the wall and fell ,I saw a gun on the floor and he used it to shoot them , after that he took two AK47's and he shot over and over again like a mad man ,if he didn't recognise you you were out,he went on and on until he reached their cars , he aimed for their under then we he shot

them they blew up, he did that to the cars one by one and until he heard his name called

Mareno:ANDERON

He knew that vouce really well .

Mike:well well well , the big boss decided to come and play

He turns still holding the guns,but his body was aching

The gang came out

Zweli:all warehouses are down Mike and so are all of his men

Jay:i put brad and Paul in the boot they are also secluded

Me:thanks bkys

Mareno:fight me Anderson like a man put those down

Zweli:oh man it's over

Marc:Mike don't don't entertain him man just shoot him

Mareno:don't be a pussy m.....

Bang bang

He was oozing blood

Me:i have to get married boys come lets go

They laughed and limped to their cars , as they looked passed their victims .

MIKE

we booked a hotel ,am not sure wether were done but we managed to take down all the ware houses that were a threat to us and now i have to call my baby

Me:I don't know why i can't reach any of them

Jay: i tried calling bee but her phone is off too

Menzi:it must be the reception try calling your dude

Zweli:yeah because i can't get through aphiwe

Me:okay okay let me try

I called him and he picked up first ring

Phone call

Me:hey men is there bad reception at your hotel

Him:Mike don't fuck with me your people are not her , my hotel is empty and impact money

Me:what the fuck you mean that they are not there ,they should have arrived this morning

I started getting hot flashes and i hanged up

Me:the plane didn't arrive

What the hell is happening shit shit

Jay:there haven't been any reports of a crash men.

Menzi:check where it has landed my man

I called one of my directors to call and they said it landed at Palestine they thought is was the destination

We were all a bit lost as to what is happening and who the hell is happening

Me:my wife has a tracker on each and every jewlary she has

I was a bit weak

Marc: am on it boss man

Why the hell can't we catch a break

Zweli:These people of your are trying my patience Mike

Jay: we have to find them men bontle is pregnant

Us:WHAT!!!!

Me:Fifi is going to lose our baby I can't let that happen , she has been going through the most

Menzi:relax men

I called and got the jet ready a d we packed again we couldn't even rest and clean our wounds ,Marc got in and said that he managed to track them but not the exact location so we left

More stress is going to put her in stress that she doesn't need and now we have to think of bontle too all of them in fact

Me: have those two fools shipped to south Africa we will deal with them after

Marc:i will get Sean on it .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 62

24 HOURS BEFORE

REFILWE

This whole thing is just stressing me out , am I ever going to find happiness with a man that everyone want dead or they want his money, I don't want to live in fear ,I think i should reconsider my life choices a bit ,but when you love a men like i love Mike it's hard to do so

Layla:hey future sis you look a bit out of it ,aren't you happy your getting married

So he lied to them

Me:i am ,I am just nervous that's all

Bee:come on sis ,not that you care but you are marrying one of the hottest bachelors in the world so be happy ,I know i am happy for you

Kayla: and he loves you with every being of him

Phiwe: and babe I know you love him

I can here all the things that they are saying but the very same live is going to get me killed so to just assure them I just not.and not say anything

Bee:so I have news for you guys

I looked at her and smiled

Layla:Okay what news

She giggles

Bee:i can't wait any longerAM PREGANT

they girls screamed

Phiwe:oh no ,now Zweli is going to be all up in my ass wanting a kid

We laugh

That all congratulated her and gave her a hug , I am happy for my sister but I really have a lot on my mind ,I miss Mike already am worried ,I can't really tell the girls anything because they don't know

Bee:baby why are you crying

Shit i didn't realise i was

Me:what!!???no no I am okay am just really excited

Aphiwe took out her ipod and we played music ,we were singing and and dancing on our chairs doing the works yaz

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

We were how having snacks a d talking ,I don't why but I felt really dizzy , like i was losing it and needing to pass out

I tried by all means to keep my eyes open but no, I couldn't

Me:what's happening i feel drowsy

Bee:yeah I know is it the food

Kayla:i haven't been eating at all and i too feel drowsy

After that I passed out.

PRESENT TIME

MIKE

I am not seer or prophet but i am sure that something is not right I can feel it ,thank god I have been putting trackers on fifi's jewlary even her engagement ring has it so I can see where she is now

The guys are sleeping getting some rest but I can ,I have been cleaning my wounds with whiskey and covering them up,I took a shower and wore my track suits ,thank god we had a change of clothes

I was going through my mind as too is doing this and my mind kept on goingnto one person over and over again, this is personal it feels personal but I keep blocking whoever i am thinking because if I do I am going to be blinded by rage and this kind of thing needs me to be stealth .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

5 hours later

We landed in Palestine and thank god we were able to find a hotel ,the I need was easily bribed , son that we can have our guns with us

Zweli:why and who would kidnap them,that haven't made any demands of some sorts i swear If they hurt my girl I swear

Me:Zweli please men I need to think

Jay:fast men there are pregnant women on that plane

Me:i know know

I honeslty felt i wanted to Cry

Menzi:you don't have any connection here

Me:i do but it's just legal bussines here men

Marc:i do

We all turned to look at him giving me the and look

Marc:it's going take a little while tones in them in but I can have them here by tomorrow and boss man can I use your name just to rein them in

Me:do whatever please

Zweli:yeah Marcus please hurry up man hurry

Menzi:so long i will work on pin pointing their exact location

Me:and i will contact some of the guys online here

Zweli:and i will get ready to kill mother fuckers

Some how we found a way to laugh a bit but the mood in the room was really somber

Marc is left and siad he will come back later and Menzi got busy with his gadgets ,I could see Justin losing it bit by bit and i honeslty felt the same but I had to be strong

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Jay:why the fuck would he do this to us

Me:his mind is twisted men ,he just sent me a ransom message i don't think this is goingnto be hard at all ,he is being amturish at this point

To be honest i was not scared anymore I was ready to shot his head god will have to forgive me

Menzi:why though i will never understand how you would raise a person just hurt them it makes no sense at all

Zweli:well i want to be better than them

Jay:i am certainly vowing to be a better father than him

It's been confirmed that my dad was the one to divert the plane to come here ,what i couldn't understand is why though why

Marc:our dad doesn't learn Mike,I thought he would have backed off

Jay:he is broke how did he pull this off

Me:it was the Colombian's plan B

Zweli:we need to get in this fast

Me:let's go fella's

We used cars that were organised by Marcus and we had guys help us ,I think its time I made my father an ancestor maybe he will be useful like

3 hours later

I wake with the mother of all heavens ,I tried lifting my head several times but it proved to be futile and it hurt me even further , I stopped trying and instead i opened my eyes and heard crying ,that's when i got the courage to wake up and see what the hell is happening .

Voice: oh the princess finally awakens

I know that voice ,why is Mike father such a bitch

though and to be honest i was not scared anymore I found it heart breaking what is happening.

Me:I see old age hasn't gotten to you grand pa

I say while holding my head because the headache was doing the most

I looked at the girls crying , the twins weren't though they just had hate and anger all over their faces

Him:still feisty i see,I see why my son likes you can take the heat.

Me:i should've killed you when i had the chance but look my silliness has gotten me to this mess

Him:shut up okay!!!! Shut the hell up

You know i didn't

Me:how does it feel dylan that you will never amount to nothing ,that's everything you do your son does ten times better huh,tour NOTHING he made the Anderson name not you.

He shot near me and i laughed just to provoke him I wanted Him to get closer so I can kick his butt and try to find a way out of this place but looks like he has gotten a bit smarter because he left the room

Bee:Fifi what's going why are you so calm he is going to kill us

Me:bontle relax okay am trying to find a way please stop crying

Layla:why is my dad doing this what the hell is happening

Their tears were actually breaking my heart ,I couldn't even bare to look at my friend

Me:i will explain everything

Kayla:explain what ,why are we kidnapped

Phiwe:isn't it obvious don't ask stupid question man please *she sobs painfully*

Their hands were all tied up but my but my foot was chained down ,smart man

Me:don't fight okay Mike is coming

Bee:coming how ,where they don't even know where we are refilwe

Me: he is coming bontle try to calm down your pregnant

I was doing all means to calm down i am not about to lose my baby because of a spinless man.

He came in while still on the phone angry and looking nervous as hell ,I don't know why but I knew right there that I am never leaving Mike for nothing because he always has my back and i am always going to have

his ,it was one of those moments that's everything comes to perspective without even thinking about things that much

He was on the phone pacing around the room.

Him:i need to move themthey are all down And that bloody Mareno is in a blood bath with his stupid goonsHey man you know Mike am dead if he finds me here ,hey hey don't hang up.....am sti.....

He threw the phone on the wall and we heard gun shots outside ,he came and pulled me up roughly and pointed the gun on my belly this fucker is gonna pay for threatening my baby.

And the girls scream become louder ,I was honestly worried about Bontle stressing herself putting her baby in danger .

Him:Shut up

He roared

Kayla:daddy please please stop am begging you

Him:Shut shut

The door swung open,you should be seen my smile ,okay why am i not scared again

Mike:dad get your filthy hands off my wife and consider yourself dead

They had guns my baby daddy looked sexy AF but he looked really tired I know Mike.

Him:your such an idiot Mike an idiot ,you chose a bitch over your own dad

Zweli laughed and looked at him deadly

Zweli:what did you say , what did call my sister wena nja

Menzi : your done Anderson,your little monkeys are dead there is nothing you can do

His eyes looked around

Mike:you clearly don't know my wife or your choosing to forget what she can do

Him:she is a women and heavily pregnant at that what the fuck is she.....

When he said that I pulled the hand that he wrapped my neck with and pulled him and he fell on his back on the ground ,i kicked his rib cage and kicked him over and over again making sure that he felt the pain ,he pulled my leg and i fell on top of him.

BANG that was a gun shot alright

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 63

MIKE

when that gun shot went off , I actually closed my eyes because my blood really felt cold when i heard it

I heard loud screams and Menzi quickly went ot help the ladies that were tied down, I diverted my eyes at my father and refilwe and there was still no movement.

Bee:don't just stand there

We finally snapped out of it and rushed to see who was shot, I was not ready if it was my fiance to be real with y'all i would lose it, I know i can handle a lot if things but losing her would shutter me

Zweli carried her off my dad and her shirt was bloody ,I tore of her shirt and realised that she has no wounds

Marc:i think the shock of events got to her she passed out I will go get water

I quickly layed her down and performed CPR on her ,after two attempts she coughed trying to catch her breath and she immediatly covered her belly with her hands ,Marc came with her water and i helped her drink

Thats When we turned to look at my father and there he was in a pool of his own blood , bontle was curled up on Justin, aphiwe just looked in shock but Zweli had her ,Menzi was comforting the twins and i knew shit

was getting real because i couldn't read my finances emotions she was still holding to her belly when she turned to look at my father who was groaning in pain

Me:we have to go guys get them out off herbabe let a go I will deal with him

Her: No

She said calmly and i helped her stand up

Me:what do you mean no , we have to get out of here

Her:Mike i don't think i stuttered when i said no

Me: okay fine but I wanted to deal with him but okay babe

Me:what's my mine is yours baby

The girls were out of sight and the guys came back

Zweli:no man sis why aren't you gone

Her:please get him up

Dad:S....son please help am your father after all am Sorry please.

Funny that now he knows am his son when he has been hurting me all this time

Fifi had the boys tie him by the legs and have him hanged from the roof and leave him like that, Zweli

was really mad at him so he was punching and kicking him here and there it was actually funny but the situation didn't allow me to laugh

I really thought she wanted to punish and let all hell loose she took my gun and shot him 3 times in the stomach

Her:your gonna be left her all alone with nothing and no one I hope you die slowly and thanks for making sure that no one will hear you ask , don't worry all of your kids are going to fine you were never the father they deserved anyway

It was the first the brothers saw her in action and they were in awe ,Dylan was groaning and screaming am guessing he was in pain

We walked away and Jay didn't even look back when he walked out

Her:Rot in hell Mr Anderson

She shut the door and we went to the cars that we came in with..... I marrying one hell of a women don't you think

5 Hours later

We used the the jets to go back home ,today was Christmas ,but we hope for a better new year ,we postponed our wedding we can't be getting married at a time like this , and thank god I won't have to bury him , he is a waste of time

On This plane we have Zweli , aphiwe , Kayla and me and my baby And the rest ore on the other,no one has asked question but you can see the butni g desire to ask , but i kindly asked we get home fist then talk about it

My baby is snuggling next to me and my world is complete

Her:you know when you g to our wedding i thought of cancelling

That surprised so I pulled her to my chest so we can try having a private conversation

Me:baby but....

Her:sshhhh let me explain

I just nodded the thought of living without cripples me at time

Her:i thought i would never be able to live this life ,always looking over my back all the time , you having to do one of your weird mission but I can , i know i can ,you love me enough to protect me all the time And I trust you too

I finally breathed

Me:you know i always got right and i love you

Her:i love you too babe always

She closed her eyes ,it's going to be a long flight .

DAY AFTER

REFILWE

We landed about 3 hours ago and everyone is sleeping ,I couldn't sleep at all because i have been feeling sick, all the traveling has gotten to me because i have been throwing up all morning ,I had my mango juice so I feel better

My mission now is to have a complete stress free pregnancy because my body felt strain when we got home but a bit shower fixed all that

I went downstairs and i made breakfast am still no expert in cooking but country these days ,I fired sausage , bacon, ham , inmate cheese toasties , i aslo took out croissants for options you know but I am playing far away from eggs ,thank god the cleaners cleaned because it so shiny you'd swear that no one resides here ,I poured juices on the juice jars and set everything on the table.

I knew very well they were not going to wake up so I took one of Mike's cigarettes and lit it up next to the smoke detector and the smoke alarm went off and i went ot sit and i ate my food

They all came half dressed running downstairs i couldn't help but laugh

Zweli:uzo'loya wena ,what the hell men

Me:you have all slept long enough come eat

Mike:but babe

Me:do it but me ,come have breakfast

Jay:after this am going up.e to sleep yoh

Bee:yep i second that

It was still weird shame ,we ate in complete silence the only think we could here was the clicking of the plate caused by the forks and knife we were using, I looked at the twins their eyes we red and puffy , aphiwe looked a bit better and bontle looked okay too

Phiwe:so were really not going to adress the big fat elephant in the room

Zweli:ha.ana man aphiwe

Phiwe:they might be okay but I want to know why was i almost killed and please don't like to us

She said that looking at Mike

Me:please call down

Layla:no no she is is right ,what the hell happend Mike, and why did dad kidnap us

Kayla:and is he dead ? please tell me the truth

Mike:why can't y'all just forget what happened and move your okay now

Bee:don't patronize up please just tell us what's happening andand are you guys gangsters i am trying to understand all of this

Oh shit

Menzi:you know what why hide it huh it's not like they don't kniw the truth already, busy asking obvious stupid questions,you should be happy that yiur alive

Kayla:don't say were asking stupid question Menzi

Layla:continue true ,your gangster

Bee:why aren't you saying anything refile we man

She yelled

Jay:bontle don't yell at yiur sister like that

Bee:and why the hell did you keep me in the dark

I scoffed ,she is one to talk

Jay:it was safer for you not to know

Then they bickered all of the excluding me and Mike, I was tired and he looked annoyed,they were yelling and shouting at each other

Mike stood and banged the table

Mike:SHUT UP MAN

It went silent

Mike: what the point of this huh , your safe be grateful ,you not knowing about our other life is safe for trust me

Phiwe:isn't that our choice to make , and please don't be selfish your women seems to know your side job

Bee:so why shouldn't we

Mike:because she can handle it ,you were crying your eyes out when we got there do you see a tear in her eyes

Layla:but

He cut him off

Mike:you didn't answer me

Phiwe:no she didn't cry but that doesn't justify anything how are we supposed to protect ourselves

Mike:you are always protected,your always safe ,I list control this once but we found you,you can't handle this life and i know you can't and the only reason fifi knows was because she needed to do something

It went silent a bit

Kayla:is daddy dead

Me:by now yes

Their eyes popped out

Me:don't act surprised please it's not cute

Phiwe:i need to leave please zweli take me home

Mike: am sorry today but no one is going home ,
Marcus is still doing a search around to make sure
we're completely safe

I looked at Mike and pulled him to the side

Me:babe am I still goingnto get arrested

Him:i would never let that happen but it's taken care of
don't worry

I breathed out

Me:we have to go to the doctor,we haven't been taking
care of angel

Him:true and your almost four months right

I nodded and he was brushing the baby bump

Him:am proud of you ,you didn't crack under pressure

I smiled at him

Me: i had to be calm ,I couldn't risk my baby being
strained

I looked back at the table and they were all gone, they went to their rooms and Mike said we should do the same but I told him to go I need to clear out the dishes

I did so and I sat on the couch to relax my feet, I know my nightmares are coming it's like I feel guilty for killing because after I do always see them in my dreams but it only happens for about 3 nights then I'm okay.

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 64

2 weeks later

REFILWE

It's a new year and it has started on a sweet and sour note, my baby and I are traditionally married but the girls are mad at me and honestly I'm tired explain to them, I'm just trying to have a healthy baby and I will not entertain their bull, won't lie though I am super lonely

Oh and I have been going to my therapy session with Mpumi even though Mike doesn't but I keep it professional with him all the time, I needed them when my nightmares were getting the better of me but all is good now and I am having one last session with honest week

I am 4 months and i week pregnant and geez the i baby is getting heavier, we decided to keep the gender a surprise. Heavy as i am were gojng back to school in 3 weeks and i am not ready yoh .

I just took a shower because i am going to shop for the nursery today but I am buying small things the rest Mike will help because he has gone back to work .

I defided on my maxi off shoulder dress, I left my curly afro like that ,minimum make up and a lip gloss.

So your girl drives now , but nothing to crazy i just drive short distances and having this comfy car bae bought makes things easier for me

I did most shopping online but think Mike's OCD has rubbed of beacuse I want everything perfect when my baby comes

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

I just did a whole lot of shopping and i am kak tired ,I decide that no fancy resturant I want a juicy burger just to please my taste buds

When I get there I am quickly helped and my food comes in no time, I was enjoying my burger when the girls came in laughing looming like they are having fun and why they were with Mpumi that I found out He is aphiwe's brother small world , if they think they are petty i am the queen of being petty shame so I just went on with eating my burger ,i am not one to beg yoh never shame.

After my little lunch i ordered a to go burger when i felt a tap on my shoulder it was aphiwe

Phiwe:so yoh really going to let us be ,we tried the silent treatment but still

Me:why is my fault that they refused to tell not me and it's not even my place to tell y'all but you guys decided to be petty,then so be it ,I don't beg and i really don't

My order came ,i took my things and I just walked out ,i don't have time for nonsense

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

I only enjoyed 39 minutes of my time alone she the girls showed up again*sigh*

They made themselves comfortable and we had a stare competition

Me:i don't have all day

I do actually

Bee: why won't you just he us ,your being petty you one

Me:are you trying to make me laugh or barf because really ladies your level of petty is out of this window

Layla:just tell us what the hell happens in that underworld of yours

I scoffed

Me:aphiwe ,your okay with Zweli all lovey dovey but your mad at me and when he can tell you what is it that they are up too... you with Jay and you twins both your brothers and yet you get mad at me ,am the one that was brought into all of this ,and you have the audacity to tell me that I am the pettyplease

I continued making my nails finer

Bee:but sis

Me: don't sis me bontle please I have had enough of this , ask your men and brothers oh whatever man yeses

Kayla:we know what were asking is selfish but you know They won't tell us

Just then the door opened and it was my baby

Mike:hey we have a full house today ...how are you baby

He kissed my cheek and sat next to me and i put my legs on his lap (told you I was the queen of pettiness)

Kayla: why did dad do that Mike,why did he have us kidnapped Nd why did he threaten to shoot fifi

Me:cause he was a waste of space with no back bone

Mike laughed and i nudged him

Mike:look this is for your own good , I have people looking over you ,I make sure your well taken off ,I made sure that your set for life ,aphiwe that's your mans job but the rest of you y'all are okay so stop harassing and stressing my women , if you have a question adress it to me the rest leave it to me

Phiwe:I don't think its fair that we were dragged into this

Mike: like i said everything is taken care off so please we need to rest

They did as told , I really don't like this tension and Being given the cold shoulder like i was the one that said that they shouldn't be told yho hee.

Him :don't stress about them

Me:who said I was

I went to the kitchen and he laughed

Him: your something else my love

He went upstairs to shower while I prepared dinner .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 65

KAYLA

I know what were doing to fifi is not fair , it's not her fault that Mike won't fill us in but we're her friends soon to be sister and yet she won't te us , I have tried getting information out of Menzi but he just won't budge ,I have even tried denying him sex but layla always falls for his charms and well he doesn't care till i fix myself , that's what he says .

Were at our house it's just my sister and bontle,were just hanging out nothing special

Bee:so our plan clearly failed but now problem is she is mad at us we can't just waltz bsck to her and expect everything to be fine

Layla:uggh anyway why are we acting stupid, we know They are in a gang ,we should just drop this it's causing tension and it's not fair at all that we pushed her that

far

Me:i know ,how in the hell are we going to apologise

Bee:let's third her a baby shower

Layla:it's too soon , aren't those done when your 7 /8 months pregnant

Me:Okay maybe a mini get togther at their house

Layla:oh yeah we could ask m....

Her phone rang and she had the widest smile ever ,she quickly picked it up and moved away a bit

Bee:does she have a boyfriend because that smile says a lot

Me:yeah i don't know hey ,we don't tell each other everything

Bee:don't lie to me ,but I won't push it

Me:yeah please don't

She came back giggling as she was hanging up her phone and sat down ,we both gave her the "what" look

Layla:don't be nosy ,I am not telling you anything at all

Me:oh come

Layla:fine ,I have a date tonight ,come help choose a

outfit

Bee joined her and we quickly we to our room

Me:what's so special about this date sis

Honeslty i think i am a bit jealous ,Menzi spends a whole lot of time with Layla or maybe it's my imagination ,in all honestly this is harder than I thought,because I clearly see that he loves us both

Layla: earth to Kayla.....is this dress okay

Me:oh no go for the red one

Menzi loves us in red ,she nods and disappears to the bathroom

Bee:hey are you okay you look a bit down

Me:yeah am okay ,I miss my mom

Speaking off where the hell is that women

Bee:i miss mine too but atleast yours is coming back so don't worry

Me:am sorry hunny

Her: hey uts okay ,I need to go my sister ,I will apologise for all of i us ,I was the ring leader anyway

Me:yeah please tell her we will come over tomorrow

Bee:Okay.....bye babe

She kissed my cheek and left

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Me:sis you look fine, stop fussing

Her:you did this on your last date with himdid i complain ?

I laughed at how nervous she is

Me:you act like it's your first date with the man

She apply her red matte lipstick then turned to look at me

Her:it always feel like a first with him ,you know how he gets

We both laugh and a knock comes though and Layla jumps up and down

Her:go get the door am fetching my bag

I hurry to the door and open as she goes upstairs to fetch her bag ,soon as i open his cologne hit me and that made me smile automatically

Me:you look handsome

He pecks my lips and let's himself in

Him:aren't you going to greet your men properly manje

I just laugh and gave him a proper kiss

Him:nazo ,are you okay baby

I pouted my lips

Me: i just can't wait for our date

Him:am seeing you on Friday baby you always do this when it's layla's turn kanti what's your problem?

I fold my hands and sulked

Him:stop trying to be cute it's not working

He kissed my forehead then layla came the stairs and he whistles,wow she looked hot

Him:Okay i see you

Her:you look so hot ,sexy , fire just amazing

He laughed , ughhh am so jealous,I can't wait for Friday ,he takes her hands and they say bye and off they go

I went to the lounge and watched some movie with a

bunch of snacks ,I don't know why i tried my luck and called my mom to my surprise she answered

Phone call

Me:mommy

Her:hey sweetie

I don't know why but a tear dropped

Me:where are you I miss you so much ,ease come back daddy is gone and i don't think he is coming back please come

Her:it's that easy baby but am glad you called

Me:mom please just come back so much is happening and your missing out

I hanged up and switched of my phone and continued watching my movie

MARCUS

I decided on you g out tonight ,it's well deserved we have been so busy that I have been denying myself some fun and pussy *lol* am glad I pledged my allegiance with Mike that men is generous as they come,for all the work we have been doing men gave us a bonus and i must say ,I need to buy a house I don't like flats they are so impersonal..... , people take my hard exterior like am some cavemen but I am as sweet as they come, well that's until you annoy me and i chop your tongue off

I am going out with Sean and thabang ,we became buddies because we been doing a lot of work together .

Were at the club and Jesus lord south African women are gorgeus but I have noticed i like those with less make up and real hair that curly afro i like em(and no i would never go for fifi i like living a lot) ,i have been stalking this one i have seen with fifi one time , I think her name is Tumi or something ,she is a dark beauty and i am going to make her mine soon , I don't like sleeping around when i have my eye on someone

Sean: so still stalking the poor lady

Me:don't start Sean ,I just don't knoe is it that am supposed to approach her without scaring her away .

I did say i have a hard exterior

Thabang: i saw here ,is it the reason you begged us to come here

Me:oh fuck you guys

They laughed ,they have been teasing me about her ever since they found out I stalk her

Sean:just go to her men uts not that hard.

I shake my head

Me: i am not ready

Thabang:pussy

They laugh

Me:you know i can kill you right

Their laughs fade

Sean:your so annoying you can't take a joke yoh

I drifted away because i noticed she was dancing with some dude and that irritated me a lot

Sean:oops looks like she is taken

I smirked

Thabang: hee Marcus i know that look don't kill the poor guy

Me:who said anything about killing

Dramatic much

Sean:what are you going to do

Me:relax i think i have a way that I can talk to her today

They laughed again

Me:keep lauging and stay single

It was now my turn to laugh at them

Thabang: Ai wena wa bora

Me: i don't what you said but I am right and you know it

.
. .
. .

It was around 1am and i saw her leaving and i also left ,I got to the parking lot and saw that she was leaving with that guy ughh man ,oh I have a gun with Me, but I don't want to scare her but i don't want her with that dude

Oh hell ,here goes nothing ,i went and tapped her shoulder she turned and looked at me

Her: do i know you

I knew i was in love then

Me: yeah i need to two to you

Guy: can't you see were leaving

Me: oh no she is not leaving with you

Her: do i kn.....Marcus what do you want

Me: glad you remeber me come lets go

I died pulling her hand and went inside my car and we drove off

Her:this is kidnapping

I laughed

Me:it's not,should I take you home

She giggles

Her:my friends don't know am back yet , so I can't go back my place

Me:we will go to mine then , where are your bags then

Her: one of my friends place , aphiwe was not at home when i got here

Me:mhm

Her: wake me up when we get there please

I just nodded,my god she is so cute I can't help but stare at get and judtbrske in all of her features

.
. .
. .
. .

I didn't want to wake her up so I just carried her inside in put her on my bed for her to sleep and i slept next to her

REFILWE

sigh, am so lazy these days that I don't know how i am going to cope when i have to go back to school , you'd swear that I am 9 months how lazy i have gotten ,it takes hours for me to bath, I descend the stairs like i am an old woman and Jesus I am for her horny and tired at the same time how does that work (lol)

I am at the doctors office just the normal routine ,I get all my necessities when i bump into Mpumi and he is all smiles when he sees me

Me:hey weird seeing you here

He laughs and offers to walk me out,I didn't decline

Him: how far long are you

Me:4 months

Him :still have a long way to go don't we

Me:yeah i do god,I just want this baby out of me already

He laughs and pats my back

Him: don't worry, he is coming soon

Me: He??

He just shrugged his shoulder and helped me down the stairs as he held on to my hand

Me:don't be weird please

I pulled my hand from him ,I went out the hospital doors and i was not really shocked to see Mike's car because he said that he might come to lick me up and my car was no where to be seen , he came out of the kissed my cheek

Mike:doc

Mpumi:that is my cue to leave,see you tomorrow

I nodded and he walked away.

Him:what his issue ,and why the hell is he always around?

Me:i don't know my love ,go ask him

He looked at me Sharply and i regretted my statement same time.

Him:did he go to whether he was going before he walked you out

Me:no he just walked me out before he got to where he was going.....why do you ask ?

Him:don't worry about it baby

We went in the car and drove off

God I want the drama to end already .

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 66

LAYLA

My time with Menzi is always amazing but tonight he seems a bit off and quiet than his usual self

Me:baby are you okay

I say as I sit in his lap and he holds on to my waist

Him:i don't think Kayla is okay at all , she always says I spend way too much time with you

Me:that's because I put way more effort in seeing you ,I like embarrassing you at work , if she wants time she should do the same thing

Him:babe don't be insensitive please

Me:Okay,you can talk to her then , but only after our date please I don't need you distracted tonight

Him:Okay babe am sorry ,I know I promised that I won't think about the other while I'm with the other

Me:exactlycome with me

I take off my thong carefully so that no one sees me and I place it on the table ,after that I stood up and he soon

after followed me , I went to the women's toilet and he locked the door behind him , his eyes already showed that he wanted me just as much as i want him , he carried me by my ass and placed Me on the basin and spread my legs and placed himself between my legs while kissing me hungrily ,he took the thing and shoved it in my mouth

Him:we don't want to scare the restaurant now do we

He unbuckled his belt with one hand and the other was caressing my thighs , I was so ready for him I felt like he was wasting time , so I helped him ,I dropped his pants and boxers at the time , his erection sprung free , I bit my bottom lip , I can never get used to the size shame , he rubbed his fingers on my clit and my walls to make sure that I was wet for him and i was , just as i was enjoying his touch , I felt him inside and j was not ready , he positioned himself well and hled on to both my thighs to make that he enter me well , he pounded me so hard and good i was losing all my senses , he was able to control to bury his fave on my neck and my moans were controlled because of my thong (don't judge us please) , I felt my body intensified and i knew very well have reached my orgasm ,wow it hit me like a brick wall because i was curled up wanting to screams my lungs ,he continued till he rich his own .

He toom out the thong on my mouth a to inside me and kissed me

Him:i love you babe

Gosh it's our proper first i love you's

Me: i love you to babe

He went to to fetch tissues he wiped himself then me ,he kept on saying how am taking him to he with all the things I make him do

Me:stop you love all the crazy shit i make you do

He pecks my lips and laughs and he nods in agreement , we both went out the bathroom , the ladies that were atbthe door looked at us like we're crazy but we kept straight face , he paid the bill quickly and we laughed our asses off in the car

Him:am going to he has

Me:don't worry am coming with you

NEXT DAY

REFILWE

I am not stupid or naive I know someone is following , I just got back dorm school to buy books for mynlast year and i swaer this white car has been following since morning ,am so happy that I carry my gun with Me all the time

Just to make sure a take a turn to the right and so does the car ,I make a u-turn and so does the car and right now this damn thing is make me mad and irky ,I stop my car and the car parks just a little further from me , this idiot , I get of my car ,I don't know where my bravery is coming from but i go anyway ,I open his car door and luckily it's not locked and i am shocked to see

who it is .

Me :what he fuck Mpumi

Him:what are you doing with a gun

Me:i was going to blow your brains off ,whay are you following me

Him:iI...I am sorry

Me:watch your back Mpumi

I went to my car and i texted aphiwe telling her what her brother is doing and she must not be surprised if they find him dead in a ditch somewhere

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Me:it was him ,I aphiwe i saw him okay I went and opned his damn door

Aphiwe came after she saw the text

Her:babe please I do talk to him to back off

Mike was pissed off and i mean pissed off

Him:i wanted Him aphiwe , if he doesn't listen this time I will chop his head off

She closed her eyes

Me:i hope it won't come to that please because i value our friendship even though your a shit of a friend

She came and hugged me and nodded

Her:am sorry ,it was so selfish of me

Him:yes ,yes you were i hope your over that shit
aphiwe

Her:yes I am not ready to be exposed to such

She bid us goodbye and she was met by bontle at the door ,I was now sleeping on Mike's lap and he was brushing my hair with his fingers

Bee:hey guys

She said and sat down .

Me:.....

Him:hey her, how are you doing.

He: am good.....sis can I talk to you

Me:it's okay I forgive you , unheard the speech from aphiwe already

Her:i am really sorry though , and Jay explained and warned me not to pry anymore

Him:really,if there is something that is going on I will warn you and get you to safety , I would never let anything happen to you guys

Me:yes and besides if you know it makes you an accomplice sis and your a bad lair

She laughs and nods

Her:your strong sis i don't know how you handle it

Me:you forget that I kick ass

She laughed and said she needs to go , Justin has a cold and he is acting like a baby.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Me:you have to warn him to stay away from me my love just don't hurt him

Him:i will ,I should burn down that stupid precise of his ,how can he hell people when he is losing his mind

Me:Mike what are you trying to say about me

He laughs and kisses my gives me wet kisses on my neck

Him:i love you baby

We are just cuddling in the bed

Me:i know you do

He bust out laughing againI need to start planning my weddingmaybe we should get married at Greece ,i still want a destinstion wedding

MARCUS

She spent the night here ,she is in the shower right now getting ready to leave but I don't want her to so I just went to the sauna in my balcony and got my temperature high ,I took of my clothes and went inside the cover , I sprinkled water on my forehead and put on my sick face ,there is no way she is leaving me here not now at least.

Her:hey Marc i am almost do.....

She stopped when she saw me

Her:oh hey you don't look so good

Me:II..... I just had a sudden headache and....

She sat next to me covered in a towel and her thighs were a little revealed

Me:you can takeyou can take a cab home

Emtional blackmail won't hurt a little bit ,she felt my

forehead and shook her head

Her: i am not going anywhere until your okay

I did my mini dance in my head,I heard fifi speaking of a vosho well I am doing one on my head LOL

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 67

MIKE

I really didn't take to kindly to Mpumi's little stunt ,I know he has been following her I am not stupid, I am not gonna kill him but am sure as hell gonna make him think twice before he thinks about MY women again

I am sitting in his office and i found 3 picture of my baby here and that really got me upset ,I take out my cigar and pour his cheap whiskey(it doesn't taste like mine okay) And I just relax and sit back

After like 5 minutes he walks in and stops on his tracks when he notices me and the gun i have on the table

Me: ahhh finally man sit down were having a session today looks like your losing your mind

I puff on my cigar

Him:I don't want to sit man am okay , plea...please
leave

Me:it's good that your scared.....sit your ass down i don't
have the time for this

He sit on the chair that is in front of me ,and i sit up
straight to look at me ,I put out my cigar and put on the
silencer to my gun

Him:hey men please relax , I swear I will stop please
man

Me:not only didn't you stalk my wife to be but you took
photos are you out of your mind mind

Him:i was just.....I didn't mean to okay I just fell in love
with her

OKAY that made me lose it ,I stood up and and i
punched him over and over again until i was satisfied

Him:don't push me dude, next time I will not hesitate to
blow your brains out

I walk to the door and i heard him sigh in relief , I
turned and shot his arm

Me:back off Mpumi next time I will way more than
whatbi just did trust me

.
. .
. .
. .

.
. .
Me:i swear babe I love that dress and why do you need to dress up its just a dinner

Her:babe have you seen palesa , she is so hot ,look at me I am I look like a damn whale

I swear I want to laugh whenever she says that but I know better than to that

Me:your gorgeous my love , you dont look like a whale

I don't know why she says that because her baby bump is not that big she looks like she is 3 mounths and her ass my god don't even get me started on the boobs

Her:Okay let me try this one ,it's my last hope baby

She disappeared in her closet and i got ready ,the gilrs forced us to join them for dinner,I have met s'celo only once and honeslty i don't know if we will get along at all but for the sake of my baby I will behave

I wore my black ripped jeans with my belanciaga sneaker,I wore my long sleeve v-neck black shirt s d paired it with my blue demin jacket , I don't like to brag but i look good to good , i then sat down while putting on my Rolex watch

Her:don't laugh

Me:i would never

Ahe appeared and i think she gets sexier by the time , she had on a fitted long baby blue dress with a slight slit on her left side ,she paired it with nude Louis vuitton heels and my baby looked so good,I don't know why she likes ridiculing herself

Me:you look great baby I promise

Especially because the dress she her baby bump a little bit more than she let it at time

Her:Okay, help me with this we have to go in a couple of minutes we don't want to be late kniw do we

Me:no , no we don't

I helped her out on her necklace and it placed it slef perfectly in the middle of her boobs ,she wore her watch too it matched with mine

Me : ready

Her: yeah i am

She took her bag and went it the resturant apperently it's one if his

REFILWE

Palesa finally charged it her lunch date but I figured why not bring Mike along since her husband was present

I just got to the restaurant and Mike and I are walking hand in hand, I immediately spot them.

When each exchanged pleasantries and sat down

Pali:babe how far long are you, are you 2 months

Me: please don't be nice Am 4 and 3 weeks and I am exploding already

S'celo: wait your four months

He asked looking flabbergasted, it was like he could not believe that I am 4 months pregnant he even added to say it's worse that I am almost five months pregnant but I do not show it

Mike: please tell her she is always going on and on about how she looks like a whale

S'celo: trust me I have seen a whale

Palesa hit his chest playfully, they are really cute these two

S'celo: ey man I heard about Colombia big ups to you for sorting that shit out

Mike: it was about time I do it those champs have no respect at all

Pali: can we not do this, not today please, lona la bora

Me: yoh I always have to shut him up about work

Mike:Okay i will get you when we get home

We laugh at that , palesa gasps when she noticed my ring.

Pali:hee wena , when did you get engaged

S'celo: hey congratulations you guys

Us:thank you

Me:it's something we kept quiet about , we don't like our personal life all over the news

S'celo:the damn media a vultures they will do anything for a juicy story

Mike:tell me about it

Pali:so when is it

Me:still not sure but it's gonna be at Greece

Mike:it is ?

I luagh because i remembered that I forgot to tell him about it

Me:am sorry baby pregnancy brain

They all laugh at that

Pali:i used to use that excuse all the time

Me:it works like a charm

We continued out dinner laughing and enjoying our conversations ,later that night we went to the roof top and the guys separated themselves from us to talk about whatever they were talking about.

Pali:it's so nice being away from the kids

Me:how was it being a mom at a young age

Pali:with the right partner i didn't mind ,he loves me unconditionally and makes me feel like an equal, your lucky you guys fell in love in your own terms ,my aunt sold me to him and his make had to work overtime that he and i work , it was hard but it all worked out

Her situation really made me grateful for mine ,she is such a sweet women i like her a lot

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Me:that was a nice dinner

Mike laughed to himself

Him:and i was hesitant to go at first but s'celo is a nice dude

I have been laugh at him all night of how he says s'celo

Him:baby don't start i am trying okay

I continued laughing, he came and hugged me from behind and kissed my neck

Him: i love you so much

I turned and gave him a proper kiss

Me:i love you too baby

He carried me by my ass and i wrapped my legs around his waist and he put me on the edge of the bed

Him:Greece huh

I chuckled

Me:yeah Greece

Him:Okay whatever you want my baby

He pushed my dress up and i didn't wear any underwear and he doesn't like that

Me:baby where is your underware

I bit my lower lip ,he unbuckled his belt and dropped his pants , my baby was already hard

Me:baby am so tired

He smirked and he dropped his face and he ate me like his life depended on it , I held on to his head ,I arched my back a little and he stopped and pushed me back to the bed a little bit ,he spread my legs open with his own ,he was rubbing my clit with one hand and the other hand he removed his shirt with the other hand,I shut my eyes a little bit because wow

Him:baby open your eyes i want to see you

Do you know how hard that is when you feel like your in heaven but I opened them anyway but I bet they were so small.

He took of my dress completely, this idiot entered me unexpectedly and he put that thing all in , his thrusts were slow but he went beast mode on me ,he pinned my hands on the bed and thrusted faster and faster , my body intensified so quick but he pulled out

Me:baby please

It came out as a whisper

He he turned me and made me hold on to the headboard and pinned his hands on mine, god I have never had anal before and he knows that

I felt him breathing on my neck while giving me wet kisses

Him:i won't hurt you okay

I just nodded

He slowly made his way in and i can't really explain the feeling but it was so good after a good 10 minutes he changed and entered my honey pot ,he was gentle yet aggressive,i think it because he was as close to coming as i was

.
. .
. .
. .

Me:Jesus babe my ass hurts

I was laying on his chest tracing his abs

He was laughing at my ealier statement

Him:am sorry my love i just had to okay , I couldn't help my self

His hands were playing with my clit , it was still a but sensetive hence I would curl up now and then

Him:let's get married next week please , I will take care of everything just buy a dress and show up

Me:are you serious

Him:yeah I will get aphiwe and Tumi to help me

Me:babe Tumi is not even back yet

He laughed

Me:what ?

Him:oh she is back ,Marcus likes her but doesn't know to tell her ,so he is pretending to be sick while she nurses him

Me:what the hell ,oh that's so cute though

Him:he is being a pussy

Me:don't be mean baby

Wow Marcus like Tumi okay now .

MARCUS

Me:am sorry I just want the remote

She passed the remote and sat next to me

Her:i feel like your using me now

She laughed

Me: i like having you around its cool and am not bored

Her:i like being here to you know

She looked at me and smiled , she is so seductive i hate it because i feel him growing

Her:Marc are you really sick

She has my shirt on

Her: because i really miss my friends but I can't leave you here

Me: of course i am sick

I faked a cough, she laughed and sat on top of me , and shook her head

Her: i like you too you know , you could've just told me because i like you too

She kissed me and i kissed her back

Okay why was i being such a idiot I should be told her a long time ago

Her: your full of tricks Marc

Me: don't judge ,it worked didn't it

She laughed and kissed me again

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 68

ZWELI

dammit I have been so busy i haven't seen my girl in a

while and i one she is pissed off, we had a shipment and i needed me to be there .

I bought her flowers and chocolate and a prada bag ,I hope she forgives me .

I get to the door and i hear laughter ,what the fuck is my sister doing here I am not gonna get laid yoh

I knocked and they said I should let myself in oh great the friend is here too

Me:hey y'all

Sis:hey big bro

Tumi:hi Zweli

Phiwe:.....

Me:baby am sorry I have been so busy ,I got you these

She noticed the bag first and i saw a smile creep on her face.

Me:am really sorry

I handed her gifts and she gave me a peck

Phiwe:Zweli you have a phone call me when you have problems ,I thought you were mad or something

Sis:your so bad at biyfrinding shame

They laughed and my sister took the chocolate from
aphiwe and started helping herself

Sis:but your not wanted here , the gilrs and i are
catching up

Tumi:and i have given you enough space so please

Me:yoh so now yoh can talk

Phiwe:baby i will call before I sleep okay

I groaned

Me:Okay fine wethu

I gave her a peck and i left yhuu i need a cold shower
shame

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

I just got out the shower and i was shocked to see my
father's wife lazying around the lounge

Her: Zweli I have no where to go your father left me
with nothing okay I need a place to stay

Me:yoh thobeka i don't have time for your nonsense
stay out of my way please

She bit her lower lip

Her:are you always this sexy.

Me:ha.a don't pull that nonsense with me I have a women that i happen to love ,if you want to continue living her watch your slef please nxa

I went back upstairs and my brother budged in after I sat on the bed

Him:what does she want here

Me:she doesn't have a place to stay man

Him: how is that our problem bafo ,you know i don't like her at all

Me: i know but we can't just kick her out

Him:mcm anyway i have a problem

Me:the sisters fucking up your life

Him: not in a bad way but I am developing feeling for them in a different way

He has nice life problems lol

Me:Okay explain to your big brother

He hit my chest and told me to be serious

Him:Okay i kniw I want to be with them both but I am

in love with one and the other i just love does that
make sense

Me:why can't you just let go of the other

Him:mxm your not helping yaz don't come up with
dumb solutions apha

Me:yhuu hai suit yourself nxa nja

He laughed and hit me with a pillow before he left ,
Menzi thinks were idiots Mike is gonna chop of his
balls off and skin him alive... i don't know why he
hasn't said anything yet .

REFILWE

Am still at aphiwe and Tumi's place and i missed My
girls yoh i wouldn't trade my time with them for
anything

Tee: no i am not telling you but all I can say is i think i
am in love with him he is so awesome

Phiwe:isn't it a bit too soon to be throwing the L word
like that

Me:and you used awesome and love in the same
sentence.....his D must be good shame

We laughed

Tee: i have been crushing on him for six months what
do you expect me to doand no I don't know how the

D is

We all laughed and high fived

Me:it happens my love , but i wanna know who he is
though please you know what they say about not telling
gossip to a pregnant women

Thay laugh at me

Tee: stop using buttercup to manipulate us please

Phiwe:but it's true though just tell us please

Me:pretty pretty please

She looked at the ceiling and said....

Tee: it's Marcus

Us:WHAT!!!!

She laughed and nodded

Tee:came as a surprise to me too but he is so sexy
chommie i look at him I just get wet

Me:yoh the Russians ancestors work overtime shame

They laughed so hard aphiwe was even snorting

She told us the stunt Marcus pulled so that she can stay
over ,oh he is never gonna hear the end of it and that
she kissed him

Phiwe:you did what??

Tee:Jesus i like the man so shoot me and it was so good

We both hugged her and screamed excitedly

Phiwe:so how big is it ??

Me:bua (talk) aowa

We laughed

Me:don't pretend like you didn't feel it when you were grinding on it hle i know i taught you good

She laughed and shook her head

Tee:all am saying is that i know he is going rip me apart when we do it .

Me:welcome to the club ,I mean the man had me doing from the back last night I still can't feel my ass

They laughed again

Phiwe:Zwe tried one time but yey the ass closed it's self involuntarily

We laughed again , I missed this hle

Tee:well i am not doing that shit shame i need my ass intact phela yoh

Me: i missed you idiots

That made laughed again

Tee:so wedding sis we been waiting

Me:destination wedding ,get your passports and visa's ready were gojng to Greece next week

They screamed and jumped up and down .

Me:i need a dress though the rest he will take care if everything else

Tee:man Mike mara he is a whole snack hle

Me:hey stay with your Marcus please

They laughed again

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Phone call

Me:bontle just go shopping sis i did the same when my clothes didn't fit

Her:hao tlhaloganye (you don't understand) none of my clothes fit.....Jay please am still on the phone

I chuckled

Me:don't snap at the menokay how about this lets make this a date on Friday when i go wedding dress shopping

Her:Okay,so long i will wear jay's and track pants

Me:see sis a solution my love

Her:i am never get to g pregnant ever again I swear

I just laughed , i felt a kiss on my neck

Me:sis i has got to go

Her:mxm wena le sex

I laughed so hard and just hanged up

Mike has been busy ever since I got here apparently wedding planning is showing flames

Me:so are you managing

Him: yeah i am managing

I laughed at him

Me:yoh better manage Mike if my wedding day is not beautiful hmmm

I was pointing him my spoon that i was eating ice cream with

Him:baby who am I

Me:Mike Anderson

He smirked

Him:and i do what

Me:yoh run the world baby

Him:exactly so relax make sure your fine self is ready to walk down the aisle make sure you get a tux for your pops too

Me:Okay my love

I love how cocky he is ,it's such a turn you won't understand shame

Me:baby but am going to miss the first week of school

Him:why does it seem like your forgetting our honeymoon missy i want the whole experience my love ,don't worry about school I will get you all the work you will be missing

Me:ohh your so sweet

He smiled

Me:i love you baby

Him: i love you more my love and i will work for the rest of my life to make you happy

Me:and i will be doung the same

Him:your existence alone makes me happy

His ability to make me blush is amazing shame.

God mara what did i do for such a blessing.

Soon to be Mrs Anderson

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 69

MIKE

Planning this wedding and juggling work is no joke , but i would do anything for my baby ,I just booked a private beach for the wedding it over sees mountains it's perfect for us ,it's just going to be family and friends so I didn't order a lot if food , I got tuxes for the boys and i sent the event planner the decor i want i have been paying so much money i think i even went over board but I really don't mind.

I am having lunch with a very distressed Jay, bontle is showing him flames

Me:relax man it's just hormones , my women is just obsessed with sex bruh she can't get enough of me .

He shakes his head and laughs.

Him:lucky bastard , my women is hardly horny but when she is yhuuu!!!! She wants it all night dude she doesn't even care if I am tired

I laughed at her exasperated facial expression

Me:my women rides me all day everyday sometimes am tired but you know i cannot say not to sex bruh never ever

He laughs

Him: i always believed that you were a sex addict you know.

Me:yep i won't even lie about that.

We laughed

Me: i can't believe I am getting marriedwhen are you getting married

He smirked

Him:sooner than think

Me:Jay what are you talking about

Him:like you i want my baby born a Anderson so before she gives birth we have to be married

I fist bumped him ,am really proud of my brother my father called him the black sheep of the family but actually he has his own ways of doing things even though they are not conventional but he always does the right thing .

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

I left work a bit early and went to our ring designer, I am changing her ring completely, this one is one has to have a lot of diamonds i want her finger to sparkle the shit out ,my ring has her name engraved and my initials on them ,this day has to be memorable for both of us

Worker:she is one lucky girl

Me:i am the lucky

She took my card and swiped it and she handed it back to me and packaged them for me .after my shopping trip i went back home and i found her laying her self ,she must have just taken a shower .

I went and hugged her from behind and rubbed her belly and kissed her neck

Me:hey gorgeous

She giggles and held my arms

Her:hey baby ,where have you been

Me:i had to do a little but if shopping for our rings

She looked at her ring

Me:please don't change my ring i love

Me:well hard luck my love i have ready bought them

Her: i hope its just as precious ad this one

Me:stop questioning your mans taste please my love

Her:Okay baby it's just j have gotten used to this one
and you know how i am

I say on the bed and she sat next to me and put her legs
on me

Her:when are we departing my love

Me:this Sunday

Her:shit , am only going wedding dress shopping this
Friday

Me:well baby you have to go tomorrow okay

She nodded and kissed my check

Her:am about to be a married women

Me:yes and i don't want any man looking at you

Her:they can look but they won't have me my love

Me:i don't want them looking at all

Her:stop being crazy hot as i am ofcourse they are going to look

Me:aren't we cocky little shits now

Her:i learnt form the best didn't I

Me:i need to stop the lessons because wow

She hit me with a pillow while laughing we chilled on the bed being stupid and having amazing make out sessions in betweenI love my life now

MENZI

Like I have said I have a dilemma I am pretty sure that I am in love with Layla but I love Kayla in my eyes those are two different types of loves right now I tried speaking to my brother but of course the idiot didn't have any good advice for me and I can't exactly speak to my sister because oh well she's gonna tell Mike about it and I can't have him finding out not now I've been meaning to speak to the twins about it but have been procrastinating so I have decided on speaking to them together about this I don't want to break anyone's heart but I have to be honest with them and I think Kayla has noticed the difference in our relationships if I have to

put it that way it is not going to be a easy talk but it's something that has to happen because I promised them honesty and the respect and this is me making due to my promises.

They just arrived in my office in their matching outfits but I am now able to tell them apart like a good boyfriend that I am (Lol)

Layla:hey babe

Kayla:hi baby

I go and kiss them both on their checks and sit down and they do the same

Me:so we need to talk

Layla:i don't like this already

Me:baby just listen please listen to me I need to say this

They both nods and looked at me ,shit this is harder than I thought

Me: there is no easy way of saying this or even trying to maneuver my way out of it but it has to be said. So I have noticed that I love you both but not in the same way I don't know if it's a bad thing but I have deeper feelings for Layla and I think this is because when I'm with her we are able to have fun and have serious conversations I am not saying that I don't love you Kayla because I do but our relationship is going at a slower pace than I anticipated and I am not saying I want us to break up or anything but I also don't want to

cause you any insecurities and I am telling you this.

I couldn't even look them in the eye because i could feel the tension between us and this was the last thing I wanted , like i said i do love her it's just not as intense and strong like my love for layla

Kayla:wait are you saying that I am to boring for you

I went to her and kneeled in front of her as i cupped her face with my hands and made her look at me

Me: No no baby that's not what i am saying at all ,it's just that somtimes you close off and i can't quite read you like her .

Kayla:am scared okay,I was scared that this would happen i didn't notice i was pushing you away ,am not as carefree as Layla and it's hard for me because i know we're sharing you

Me:and i am not comparing you with her you guys are two different people so I don't compare it's that I need you to let me in ,that's all I want babe

She nodded and i gave her a hug I heard her sniff a bit , I looked at layla and she gave me a understanding look and she stood up

Layla:i think i should give y'all space you will find me at home sis.

She up and left , I pulled Kayla up to stand up

Me:i didn't want to make you cry you know

Kayla:am glad you hold me though, I know i messed up

I kissed and pulled her closer to me and then kissed her nose

Me:we all learn right , and i know i can't be without you I don't want to be

Kayla:and i can't be without you too , it would shutter me

Me:come here

I say on the table and we made out a bit

Kayla:your such a special human being any other men would just kept on havi g sex with me and not say anything

Me:i did tell you that I love you right

She nodded and pecked my lips

Kayla:have you gotten your tux for the wedding

Me:Mike sorted that out for us baby don't worry

She was fondling with my my shirt and i was holding on to her ass

Me:are you okay babe

She nodded and put her head on my chest i love for

moment like these.

MARCUS

I just picked up Tumi were going on a date our first date and to be honest am nervous,I havent been on a grate in a long time

I am driving and i have my hand on her thigh ,I can help

Her:wanna have a fun date

Me:what are you talking about

She giggles

Her:am sorry i can't get over your accentlet's go climbing i don't want a

Oh yeah am going to marry her

Me:are you serious

Her:yeah why not , and besides i had a late lunch today.

Me:Okay

We googled for a rock climbing club andas soon as we found it we went it it , she changed into these tights we bought in the facility next door.

We were given instructions and whatever but I chased away the instructor i wanna bond with my women and

get to know her well.

Her:your so rude but it's so hot

She laughed as she strapped on her gear

Me:am not rude , but am on the date with you not him
so he can scam.

She laughed again and pecked my lips , and i can't get
over how touchy feely she is ,it's awesome .

After she was done and i was also done she hooked her
rope so that if she falls its there to catch her

Me:your going up first because i want to observe
something

She looked at me

Her:why though i thought we were doing this together ,
we bora waitsi hao romantic nex (your annoying,your
not romantic)

Me:i know am romantic and stop talking like that you
know i can't hear you .

She laughed at me

Her:coming

I shook my head

Me:i want to look at your ass while climb it might calm

me down

She laughed and did i her thing did i mention how hot she looked because wow.

Her:your something else

Me:make sure you shake it please

She laughed again and almost missed her step

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 70

KAYLA

I am still with Menzi he insisted that I spend the night with him so he booked us a hotel ,we have been having sex like monkeys the whole night and i am shit tired and so is my Vagina

Him:babe are you sleeping

Me:no am burning up donwn there

He laughed and hit on top of me

Me:Menzi,Menzi no no i am tired do you you want to finish me up

He laughed and pecked my lips

Him:one last round please

Me:no Menzi baby no.....we can take a shower together

He groaned and got out of bed

Him:come lets go

We had a shower together when his phone rang he quickly got out and answered

Him:heyyou okaywhat shut up*laugh*yeah yeah i knowmxm to be stupidno i will see on on Monday am spending time with kaylaokay bye baby

That call Made me very happy

Me:baby are you coming back

Him:yeah a minute

He came back a back and had one steamy session ,times like this make me wish that he was mine and mine alone but I know it's not a possibility and i am never letting him go because i love him and a lot ,he might not love me like my sister but what relationship is perfect hey

Am wearing his shirt and boxers and he has briefs on and were just laying in bed talking about everything

Me:don't laugh i thrust it was hot

Him:baby you thought dressing up as a stripper in the 6th grade was hot

Me:hey i was standing up for women's rights

He laughed and kissed my forehead

Him:your something else baby ,so I think its time we tell Mike about our relationship,I think we have ironed out our issues now

Me:dont you think its too soon

I am really scared of Mike and worse now that I know he is a gangster

Me:baby what if he kills us

He laughed

Him:i don't think he would go to such extremes and were telling him before we go to Greece

My heart was running on an abnormal rate

Me:o....okay babe

He closed his eyes while tracing his fingers on my back
.....I feel safe in his arms

.
. .
. .
. .

.
. .

Me:he want to tell him sis ,before their wedding do you know how Mike is going to freak

Layla looked like she didn't care at all

Her:sis it was bound to happen,I was tired of having private dates anyway

Me:did you hear what i said and do you know who is our brother

Her: Kayla yes he is going to freak out but he will get over it it's not like he can make us break up with him right

I gave her a look

Me:are you sure

Her:i would lose my shit if he did that

Me:you know how Mike is

Her:oh no he can't that to us sisshit shit

She was tearing up

Me:relax okay we have to relax and find out

MIKE

Yoh no man ,so fifi and i have been practising a dance this whole day , she said it's called the baby mama dance challenge and to be honest i am so bad at this dancing shit and she has been laughing at me all day long

Me:Okay after you tweak on me what i do

Her:you hold my belly from behind and just follow the Lead

Oh did I mention that were doing it live on Instagram , imagine me the whole Mike Anderson dancing for the world to see

Me:baby do we have to do it live my love

Her:babysits goingnto be fun and people will now that your not a robot

She goes and switches on her phone and plays despacito and we practise one more time and i think am doing good but boy is fifi crying she even has tears falling on her cheeks

Me:will you stop laughing at me am trying my love

Her:you definalty have no rhythm my baby

.
. .
. .
. .

.

.

Her:Okay you ready babe

I am never getting her pregnant ever again

Me:Okay it's now or never.

She packs the song and i am minding my business moving while she starts the video ,she reads the messages coming through and saying hi an all that ,she than explains that we will be doing

Her:so please guys don't laugh at my baby omay beacuse he is so bad okay

Me:traitor

We laughed and she started the song and the games began baby .

We did our dance , she couldn't stop laughing though out the dance she was twearking and grinding on me . we ended the dance and went in to read the comments

oh my babe He is a keeper marry him but sure take him to dance class

*man what are you doing *

I lost it when i saw Zweli' s comment

*you know that everyone saw that right an i mean

everyone *

Me:oh my god my life is over

She was laughing so hard that most of the comments
we laughing emojis

Her:a.....Am s.....sorry baby

I flopped on the couch and sulked on the couch

Her:Okay guys bye

She ended the live stream continued dancing

Her:baby am sorry

Me:am never getting you pregnant ever again

Her:that will teach you to pull out

Me:whatbaby your such a traitor

Her:or use a condom

Me:am never doing that

Her:okay then my love you will be dancing on live
streams with each and every baby

She was laughing going upstairs

Me:your cruel women

She laughed harder ,god my staff , my investors are going to have a field day with this yoh.

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 71

REFILWE

My life is nothing i thought it would be but then again I am not complaining, I love my baby , my fiance i just love everything about my life he has become my home and i would never trade that shit for anything

Today am going wedding dress shopping and i know i am goingnto struggle finding the one because this is all sonlast minute

Him:i should have a designer get something ready for you

Me:hey well go all out for our fifth wedding aniversarry

Him:i like the sound of that ,and this time it would be in out backyard

Me:our babies will witness mommy and daddy profess their live once again

Him:and by then my love we will be running the

universe

I just giggle

Me:do I have a budget

He laughs

Him:do I love you

I smiled and went to hug him

Me: Okay okah point taken.

I got dressed in just my little black dress , purple lip and red shoes trust me you can never go wrong with that combination

Him:do you have to look this sexy my love

Me:yes I have let hoes now that you have a hit wife

Him:Claim me my love

I laughed and kissed him goodbye and drove to the bridal shopwhen i arrived the ladies were already there and so happy,I went to the and hugged them and they gave me non-alcoholic champagne

Bee:babe re tsene man we are within maaaaan

I started twearking and shaking my butt while holding my belly and they all started to laugh and i hugged the consultant that was going to be helping me and i knew

he was going to be dramatic as hell

Him:uh uh girl you know this is so short notice but your man is Mike Anderson so we have to make it happen

Bee:you got that right

They laughed and he pulled me aside

Him:so hunny what style do you want

Me:i want something float okay i don't want nothing tight , I want nothing that is going to hinder me from having fun

Him:oh sweets let me go look for some options

I went bsck to the girls

Layla:sonwhen are we flying out because i need to know when to start packing

Me:probably tonight Mike said were leaving a day ealier then we thought.....phiwe ,Tumi do you guys have your passport ready

Tee:Marc helped me get mine quicker

They oh and ahhs in the room and Tumi blushed

Kayla:wow can't belive Marc is in a relationship ,wonders shall never end

Bee:he is always so macho and intimidating,how do you

Me:i know He is a softie

Tee:yes he is sweet

We laughed at her , it's really hard to believe that Marcus is in love

Me:stop teasing my friend please

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

I was already tired I have tried 11 dresses and unlike nothing , and i mean nothing at all

Me:fuck am tired of this shit already

Bee:you still have a few more options sis

Kayla: don't give up now ,come on sit up straight

Phiwe:Okay let me show you something different okay my keep an open mind

She came with a ball gown dress it was not to much but it wasbjsut perfect

Bee:you should have never wanted to go minimal

Kayla:do you know who you are now

Tee: and you you are marrying

Phiwe:simple is not yiur fucking name anymore

Bee: your a big deal now babe

I couldn't help but cry ,of course i am not going to change who i am , I will always be a humble person but I have to accept my new lifestyle i really have to or i will for her try to be the old me when she is no more

Me: let me go try it on

I went and i couldn't stop crying when i was looking at myself in the mirror ,I looked amazing people i mean drop dead gorgeous person

I went out and they all gasped and were hitting each in the on the thighs

Bee:sweet Jesus sis

Me:do I look good

Layla:you look breath taking my love

Tee:like a queen sweetie

J started dancing again and they all joined in

Him:i geuss we have the dress sweets

Me:yes ,yes we do

He putt on my well and have me a bouquet and i looked out of this world , if i would say so myself

Phiwe:Mike is going cry he see' s

Me:he has to or else

They laughed and we did everything and even paid for the dress ,oh wow the dress was hella expensive , it was R90 000 hell he did say no budget right

After we all went home straight because abo preggy we hella tired

I flopped on the couch and sighed loudly

Him:hectic day.....did you find the dress

Me:yeah it was perfect ,but I had to go with a ball gown baby , I hope it does not clash with the theme

Him:nope whatever you were is perfect as ling as it's white my love

He sat next to me and talked to his baby and i dosed of to sleep , i was super tired

NEXT DAY

MIKE

I got a message from Menzi saying he has something important that he wants to talk to me about , I know he is dating both my sister both of them must be losing his fucking mind either he leaves them both or takes one he can't date BOTH of them i think i might let it go on to way to long

Her:baby penny for your thoughts

Me:just think about my sisters and their boyfriend

Her:excuse me what !!!??

She was packing our bags because we're leaving in the early hours of the morning

Her:they are dating the same men

Me:your brother to be exact

That left her mouth open in shock.

Her:what the he'll!!!

Me:yeah i rhoughtbthey would ebede their crazy relationship but noooooo they had to continue with their stupid relationship

Her:baby don't be like that baby just listen to them , maybe ...

Me: No ,No , they should break up am not even asking them

Her:that's not fair

Me:babe they are about to be in laws and they are fucking around hell no

Her:your not being fair

Me:baby don't get involved in this ,they are my baby sisters

Her:and he is my brother.....okay no this is weirdyou know what i am not getting involved just don't hurt my brother okay

I pulled and kissed her cheek

Me:i am not gonna hurt your brother but they will not be togther

She went on to pack and get everything ready.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

They got her 20 minutes ago and they have been trying to explain their bogus relationship to me and i was not intresterd in all that shit because i know everything that I needed to know

Me:are you done

Zweli:don't be like that man

Me:don't be like what , you think am gonna let you continue with this shit , it's never going to work either your going to hurt one if my babies or both of them ,what the fuck are you doing with two women

Layla:Mike ple....

Me:did I say speak

They both shook their heads and bowed them

Him:your not even listening to us Mike

I stood up and gulped all of my cognac and ascended on the stairs

Me:break up or I will do it myself and i promise you won't like my way ,I don't want to see you looking at each other or even smiling at each other , don't fucken ruin my wife's wedding which will happen even if I see a glimpse that your still together it will be trust me

I continued going up the stairs

Me:you love them get the fuck outta here Menzi nxa

Hell will break loose before that happens and who the fuck is he kidding loving two women sisters MY SISTER

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 72

MENZI

I was not leaving till i had the chance to talk to Mike and make him listen to me , I knew this was fucked when we started but my girls and i have grown since we started our relationship

Sis:he coming down let him calm down first ,kodwa nawe Menzi

Me:it just happned okay I never planned for this to happen

Sis:but you have to look at it from his perspective bro , tour fucking both his sisters phela

Ay refilewe and her bluntness bakithi

Me:i know ughhh

Mike came down the stairs and sat next to my sis

Sis:baby listen to him okay then question later

Mike:but babe.....

She cut him short

Sis:Mike stop being hot headed and listen

He looked at me , I don't wanna lie and say i wasn't scared , I am shit scared because i know how he is just last night Zweli told me he shot someone at the warehouse for talking back at him , yep Mike is one crazy mother fucker and i am not about to act all mach in front of him

Mike: am listening

I sat on the edge of the couch and put my elbows on my knees

Me:i look i never meant for any of this to happen trust me , but it did i fell hard for both of them , yes the situation is not usual and it's definalty what you are used but they are ,I tried avoiding the relationship but I just couldn't am sorry the intention was never to disrespect you or walk over your head trust i knw who you are but matters of the heart are complicated

He was so stoic , he didn't show any emotions at all , it was like if he let himself feel i would be fucking dead

Sis:yoh i am not getting involved I still need to packMike don't be harsh i love you both

She kissed both our cheecks and left the room

Mike:you mean to tell me that it all rosey and y'all are happy

Me: be reasonable men at all relationships are perfect you that too

Him: I am not judging on the two women Menzi and i n3ver will judge others, but you went to sisters , twin fucking sister and you expect me to be all fine and happy about all that....nah men we don't live in fantasies

I sighed loudly

Me:i won't let you break me up with them ,I can't let you

Him: don't test me Menzi please I don't want to upset your sister

Me:well like i said i don't let you separate us

He stood up and clenched his jaws and loomed at me dead in the eye

Him:you be honest with me and maybe just maybe i will let go off this

Me:ask whatever

Him:you love them both , the same way and that none of the sisters have ever felt left out , tell me that nine of my sisters have cried because she felt like less to you answer me that and i will let go

I looked to the ground and didn't say anything

Him: their sister's Menzi, I don't know what intrigued you to want both women like i said at the end one of

my sisters is going to be hurt all because you THINK
you love them bothdon't fucken joke like that

Me: stop telling me how i feel

Him: and stop lying to yourselfmake sure yiur not
late for my wedding

He walked awaydammit he did raise a while lot of
valid points OH FUCK THIS

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Kayla: what did he say ?

Layla: baby speak you have been quiet ever since you
came her

I snapped out of my thoughts

Me: don't worry its nothing I can't handle, but until he
understands i don't think we should be together

Them: WHAT!!!!

Layla hurriedly came and kneeled and cupped my face
with tears streaming down her face

Layla: don't do that you promised me that you will

never leave because someone wants you too you promised

I have this so much but.....but what ????

Me:baby I don't want to ruin their time after the wedding we will deal with this i promise you

Layla: no no i will talk to Mike make him understand please baby please

Kayla: let him layla he has made up his mind don't you see

Layla: shut up Kayla okay shut if you can move on without him it's okay but I can't so shut the fuck up

Me:Layla don't be hostile

Layla: then don't leave me please baby i will talk to Mike today before we leave please

Her cry was breaking my heart so much that I couldn't look at her ,sometimes i just wish she was closed off like Kayla then we wouldn't have these problems

Me:don't we will deal with it after i promise you okay

She sat on the Matt defeated and and crying softly but you could we she was heart broken but I just stood up and kissed her hair and left

I waved goodbye and just left , I fucking hate this

MARCUS

Yep i love having a girlfriend she has been going on and on about how fifi is going to look and i love how happy she is when she talks about her friends

Me:babe will you stop , I might as well see how she will look

Her:don't say that I am just excited for my friend okayOkay babe concentrate on the bathroom door okay and play a song for

Tumi and i do all sorts of crazy things all the time so I wonder what going on now ,anyway I played Beyonce - partition ,my crazy girlfriend dimmed the lights and i could help but get excited down there it's been a while okay

She showed her leg and I was egging her on , she appeared and was shaking her hips in a seductive manner ,I sat up straight and she gave me a lap dance while grinding on me

Me:fuck Tumi what are you doing to me

She whispered in my ear

Her:you ready for me daddy

Holy fucken shit ,I just nodded vigorously

Her:well you have to wait a little longer because baby i am tired

Me: haaaaa Tumi don't be evil what that

She laughed why are women so evil , my boner was rock solid,she got inside the covers and singled me to come cuddle her (the nerve of this women) , I might as well since it's all am getting yoh.

Her:we have to rest okay we have a trip tomorrow babe

Me:it doesn't make you less evil so please

She sneaked her hands inside my boxers and started stroking it , the shivers it sent me it was ungodly lord have mercy

Me:will you stop being evil

Her: i do this to remind me how your going to destroy me

I laughed at her statement until i realised something

Me:waitis that why am not gettig any ass at this moment ?

She laughed and nodded

Her:fifi told me it takes her days to recover sometimes , I think your vaseline and sock will work overtime babe

I hit her playfully and punched her cheek

Her:ouch Marc

Me:please tell me your joking

She laughed again and layed her head on my chest while stroking me down thereWOMEN ARE EVIL I TELL YOU

Me: i can't believe you called me Daddy

She laughed again and hit my chest

INTERRACIAL LOVE

REFILWE

LORD WE arrived in Greece about 5 hours ago and i have no sleep at all , I look around me and all the girls are out , i mean completely out , they must be dead tired form the partying we did , in less than 10 hours i am going to be some ones wife i think inhale to pinch myself every time I think about all of this ,my dad made it 2 hours after we arrived and he is amazed at how lavish my life has turned out to be ,all he said to me me was "you deserve all of it my baby all of it " his presence alone make me emotional but his words made me bawl the fuck out

Okay I need to sleep I don't need puffy eyes when i wake up ,i so used to snuggling that I pulled aphiwe close to me so that I can snuggle her

LAYLA

finally she is asleep , I have been waiting for her to sleep for the longest time ,I texted Menzi about 30 minutes ago ,I need to talk to him ,I am so mad at Mike but I don't want to ruin this for fifi so I kept my mouth shut but after the wedding i am going to give him a peace of my mind

I quietly sneaked out and as i was about to turn i felt someone pull him and it was him ,it was my baby

Him:going somewhere

I giggled and hugged him ,and he pulled me to some corner and it had a chair with two drinks , he sat down and i sat on his lap

Me:i hate that we have to hide

Him I know but hold on for a bit babe ,i don't want to upset Mike and i really don't want to stress my sister out

Me: I understand babe ,i missed you

He put his face on my boobs and exhaled loudly

Him: i missed you too ,all i wanted to do on that long flight was to hold you

I was brushing his freshly cut hair with my nails

Me: how do we solve

Him: i have to do something that I should have done a long time ago

Me: and that is

Him: don't worry about it but it's going work out for us nothing is getting in my way to being with you

Me: you know Mike

Him: yeah but I think i am finally ready to do the right thing , by you and your sister I hope he appreciates that

Me: just don't leave me ,in whatever you compromise not to leave me

He raised his head and our faces were inches apart ,our breaths intertwined, I live for moment like these

Him: i love you too much to ever leave you,I don't even think of doing such

With that our lips collided , I turned so that I could straddle him and he held on to my ass , it was as if we were kissing for the last time ,I have noticed that he pours his emotions out when we kiss or when we're intimate , I understand him well too much to know that he is having a battle with his emotions

I broke the kiss and cupped his face with both my hands

Me: don't make decisions that you haven't thought

about

Him: trust i have thought about it baby

Me: Menzi don't

Him: i have to, I couldn't live with myself if I didn't

I just nodded and i just hugged him for a long ass time

I feel like am losing him or maybe it's my imagination.

NARRATED

Finding your soulmate in this day and age is not easy, when you find that one person that was made for you hold on to them, never let them go, the road won't be easy you will be tested but your love for one another will pull you through

Fifi and Mike have one hell of a round to go through, you thought this was the end but it's only the beginning

.

NEXT MORNING

MIKE

To my darling baby

I want to thank you for all the wonderful ways you make me happy, even when you don't realize it. Just seeing your face or hearing your voice can make my day already. It's a treat when I get to spend the

entire day with you and do all our favorite things together. Because of you, I have a permanent smile on my face and butterflies fluttering in my stomach. Thank you for giving me this giddy, happy feeling ever.

I'm so grateful for you because you never left my side when I was going through some emotional issues. You made sure that I had someone who would be with me, to hold my hand, to dry my tears, and to offer emotional support. I'm so glad that it was you. I am forever indebted to you. I thank God every day that He gave me someone like you for a boyfriend and a best friend now soon to be husband

You were there for me when times were tough. You were always the first person to ask me how I was doing, if I needed help with anything, or if I wanted to get away so that I could clear my head. You were always so worried about me, and I always told you that I was fine. Because I was, knowing that I had you with me. Now that everything's okay, I know that I can still count on you for anything.

I want to thank you for being the best boyfriend in the world. I don't need to tell you what I need, but you always know what it is somehow. Sometimes I think you must be psychic or something. Thank you for always treating me like a princess, for making time for me no matter how busy you get, for making the effort to bond with my family, and for hanging out with me and my friends. These little things mean a lot. These are what endear you to me.

I know that there are times when I can really shut down and be so hard to deal with. I want to thank you

for loving me, even in those days when Iâ€™m at my worst. Thank you for always being there for me despite the many reasons you shouldnâ€™t. I know Iâ€™m not the perfect girlfriend, but because of you, I want to be the best one. I love you so much. Thank you for keeping me in your life.

I want to thank you for loving me even when Iâ€™m most unlovable, and for being patient with me when Iâ€™m going through something difficult in my life. I love how you take care of me and tell me everythingâ€™s going to be alright. Itâ€™s because of you that I can smile again and be brave about life again. I love you, and I want to be with you for a very long time.

Thank you for sticking with me even after youâ€™ve seen how moody, messy, and difficult I could get. I know that I can be a little hard to handle, but because of you, Iâ€™m embracing the gentler and kinder side of myself. Thank you for bringing out the best in me. I love you with all my heart.

I love you because you love my friends and my family. You make sure that you spend time with them, and that you make them feel special. I love you because you try to love the things I love. You always put my needs first, and you always show me how much you love me. Thank you being such a wonderful boyfriend. I can really get used to this kind of loving!

Ever since I met you, my life has been on the upturn. Thereâ€™s a positive shift happening, and I know that it has something to do with you. You bring out the best in me, and you make me see the world from a different

perspective. Because of you, I no longer hold on to my fears and just let things happen as they should. Thank you for opening a whole new world for me.

Thank you for loving my quirks and putting up with my moods. Thank you for always making me feel special and loved. I know that you have a lot of people in your life and you love them all, but you always make me feel that Iâ€™m your favorite and that Iâ€™m loved the most. Thank you for loving me. I want you to know that youâ€™re my favorite person, too.

You changed my life with hardly any effort. You secured a spot in my heart like you have no plans of ever leaving. Thank you for making me feel a love like no other. Thank you for making me feel like Iâ€™m the luckiest and most beautiful girl in the world. I love you so much, and I cannot imagine what life would be if we hadnâ€™t met.

I feel like youâ€™re more than just a boyfriend to me. Youâ€™re the first person on my speed dial. Youâ€™re my emergency contact. Youâ€™re my lover, my rock, my best friend, my shoulder to cry on, my personal chauffeur, and my number one cheerleader. Thank you for being all these things to me.

Thank you for being a constant in my life. We have been through so much together. I cannot believe it sometimes. I love you because you stayed by my side, and you promised that everything will be okay. You kept your promise, and you always came through for me. For that, I will always be grateful to you.

Thank you because you always know how to make me

smile. You don't mind doing silly nothings with me, and you enjoy hanging out with my friends and family. Thank you for always being honest, for always being strong, and for always being brave. I love you always!

Every time I think of you, I am reminded of God's goodness. He gave me the best boyfriend a girl could ever have, and he loves me just as much as I love him. Thank you for always being there for me.

Thank you for always giving me a kiss and a hug when my spirits are low. Thank you for always being honest, even if you know the truth can hurt me. Thank you for being firm and not letting me have my way all the time. Thank you for always supporting my dreams. You really are the best. I love you!

I want to thank you for everything you have done for me. It's been a very challenging year, and knowing that I have you by my side made all the difference. I don't know where I'd be without you. I love you more now because of this. Thank you for being here.

I'm having the time of my life, all thanks to you! Thank you for the wonderful memories, and I'm so excited to be making more of them with you. Each day that I spend with you only convinces me that you really are the best boyfriend in the world. I love you!

I never knew what love meant until I met you. You opened my heart to love, and my life has not been the same ever since. You taught me how to give without expecting anything in return. You taught me to be brave, and to look towards the future with wide-eyed wonder. You taught me the meaning of patience,

faithfulness, and forgiveness. Most of all, you taught me how to love. Thank you for being a part of my world.

I don't know what I did to deserve a boyfriend like you, but I'm so glad that I did. I love the way you love me. Thank you for everything that you do and for everything that you are. I can't wait to be your wife and make you the happiest husband! I love you now and forever.

I know that I don't say this often enough, but I want to thank you for being a wonderful boyfriend to me. You have gone above and beyond the call of duty. I don't know what I would do without you. I'm so very blessed to have you in my life, and I hope you know how much you mean to me. Thank you for all that you do, for all that you teach me, and for all that you make me feel. I love you.

If I were to list down all the things that I love about you, I will never be able to stop. There are so many things that make you the amazing boyfriend that you are, and I don't want to share them with the world in case some other woman wants to have you for herself! But seriously speaking, thank you for being such a great boyfriend and a wonderful human being. My life is so much richer, happier, and more colorful because of you.

I used to think that I will never find real happiness or true love because of all the heartbreaks and disappointments that I experienced in the past. But then I met you, and you made a believer out of me. We fell in love, and we were never the same people again.

Thank you for coming into my life and making me the happiest girl in the world. Thank you for your love that inspires me to be a better person.

I never knew just how wonderful life could be until you came into my life. You are my life's biggest blessing, and I cannot imagine a life without you in it. I just want to thank you for treating me like a princess, and for loving me the way I want to be loved. I am grateful for you, and I love you!

No one else can bring me so much happiness the way you do. It's a kind of love that I've never felt before. You have given me so much that I don't think I can ever give back all the love that you've given me. But I will definitely spend every day proving how much I love you. You truly are a blessing.

I know that I don't say it often, but I want to thank you for being such a reliable presence in my life. Even if I feel like the whole world has turned on me, you are always there. Never will a day go by that I will not be grateful for you.

In you, I have found a second family. Every day you show me that true love still exists. My heart is full because of how you always believe in me even when I don't. I value you for your kindness, generosity, and honesty. Thank you for choosing me to give your love to and spend your energy on. I know that I will never be able to thank you enough. I love you!

I probably said I love you so many times here but I feel like I can never say it enough

P.S this is forever

LOVE
YOUR WIFE TO BE

That was her letter to me , I was a ball of emotions , I
have been in love before but this love is epic

Jay:man are you crying

Me:if you we're me you would be to

My baby just made me cry for the first time ever She
made me feel like I have made it in life

I fixed my bow tie and looked myself in the mirror and
smiled

Me: this is forever

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 74

NARRATED

The weather was perfect sunny with a bit of cloud it
was not too hot but they were Blessed with a bit of sun
the couple was nervous but they knew it was the
beginning of forever a little lives don't hurt anyone
right. You know when you know you you're doing
the right thing when you don't question anything about

your life everything does not weigh heavy in your heart everything falls into place I like it was a puzzle that was easy to solve and you know at the end of the day everything will be ok and that's what you want it's what you need it's what you've been yearning for in all your days of life and finally you got what that's how the bride and groom felt, that are completing their puzzle pieces and now they are about to embark on the puzzle of life together

Fifi looked spectacular and breath taking the girls could not stop crying, I mean girl had to her make up twice because she kept on ruining her make up, her dress fit perfectly, her shoes matched the copper color that Mike had chosen as part of their color scheme which was purple with a touch of white, he did that because he knew his wife loves the color and as all you all know Mike would do anything to please his wife, they were chandeliers with real diamonds that were used as disco balls to give their venue that expensive taste, everything was simple elegant and absolutely our if this world

MIKE

Pa: you promise me that you will always take care of her, she acts tough but am sure you know she is fragile

He said that as he was fixing my bow tie and the collar of my shirt

Me: I promise to take care of her, I know it's not going to be easy at all but I promise to do my best

He helps me with my diamond cufflinks

Him: and that's all I ask for , never speak in anger with her but she needs to respect you and you should do the same , I love my daughter and I won't appreciate any form of abuse against her

He steps back up bit and looks at me and nods

Me: she is going to cry when she sees me

We laugh and share a brief hug and he whispers

Him : never tell her she is wrong even if she is never admit it you will have a long lasting marriage

I laugh and we end the hug ,I look at myself and laugh a bit

Him: let me go I will see you when I hand my daughter to you

Me: thank you for raising such a wonderful women

He opens the door of the room and he looks at me

Him: and thank you for making and honest women out of my daughter

He then walk out , I am an emotional wreck at this point but I am sure I want to be her husband ,I breath in and out and walk out my room and go meet the boys at the bar I need the shots

I get there and drink them at one shot and the boys laugh

Zweli: the nerves have kicked in haven't they

Me: I just can't wait to see her

They all looked really good and sharp

Marc : when are the women coming out

We all laughed at him

Menzi : men your whipped

Me : you're the definition of whipped she is all you talk about these days

Marc : I have a black beauty queen can you blame

Me: I still can get used to the ass I have

Zweli: hay sies man that's my sister.

Me: your one to talk

Jay: yeah I still can't get used to the ass and the curves and now the boobs are going crazy

We laughed because fifi and bontles boobs look so big and plump

.
. .
. .
. .

We went to the area and it's just us remember the

ladies soon joined us and they all looked amazing
Phiwe came to me

Her: she looks amazing if you don't cry were going
to kill you

She went back to her seat and I just laughed ,how many
times does my women want to make me cry .

She is coming any moment now and she will be my
WIFE , let me emphasis MY WIFE ..it sounds good to
say that.

REFILWE

I look at the mirror and I see a grown women , a mom
to be and some ones wife , a lot has happened in a short
space of time but inwould never change anything that
happened , because everything led us to this moment ,it
led us to our forever ,my dad and my bothers are
glaring and grinning at me as I fix my hair a bit
Zweli: stop fussing you look perfect alresdy

Menzi: let her be , I want to admire her a bit
That right there made me teary

Papa: oh my baby girl ,am so happy for you

I turn to look at them and they smile at me and we
have a little group hug

Me: am so happy

I chuckle a bit

Zweli: you should be and promise me you will never
lose yourself to your marriage

Menzi: and you will never forget your dreams

Papa: and always remember you have a home with me

I nod trying to push back the tears ,I don't want to mess up my make up again

My brothers took my hands helping me to walk while my dad was holding my trail behind me , we walked to we reached the end of the aisle behind the walls and we stood there trying to compose myself, they helped fixing dress and to be honest I was nervous, am glad it's just friends and family, this is the dream ,the one's who love you and want to see you succeed in life are the one's with the privilege to see your happiness prevailing

Papa: should we start my baby

I composed myself and nodded , Menzi and Zweli helped and covered me with my veil and they both kissed my cheeks at the same time , remember I didn't plan out wedding so I don't really know how everything looks , all I know is that the main color is purple ,how I love him for listening (weird thing I love love love purple but I can never bear to wear the color).

I heard our song being serenaded (perfect by ed Shereen) it's the same song that played when me made love the night of our engagement , my father walked in front of me when my brother held me by my hands , Menzi squeezed my hand while Zweli kept on telling me to relax everything is okay .

All this time my gaze was on him , I didn't want to miss anything , he was smiling more than usual, he didn't know what to do with his hands so he opted

to rub his hands together (I one he does that when he is nervous)

The serenade to an end because we made it to the top of the aisle to and everyone sat down

Pastor: who gives this women to Mike Anderson

Them: we do

My father and brother said in unison , my dad shoes my miss hand and they went to sit down , Mike held on to both my hands , a tear escaped his eye and I couldnâ€™t help but let mine do the same

Pastors : we are gathered here today because of love , nothing but love, now our bride and groom here have chosen to write their vows so letâ€™s here them

He looked at Mike ,lol this pastor is a clown but nothing mattered because i was with him and about to be Mrs him

Mike: my love , my everything , you know I have been trying to think how my life was before and it has been hard for me to do so because I think my life began after I met , I donâ€™t think there is anyone that understands me like you so , cheesy yes but itâ€™s the truth , I have seen what life without you is like and trust and believe me I donâ€™t want it , youâ€™re the first thing I think about when I wake and the last when I sleep , my lifeâ€™s purpose is solely to make you happy and build our family , I love you so much my baby that I wonder if itâ€™s normal at times , and that I will be my forever mission making you happy and making babies of course

They laughed and I was just trying to control my tears
and trust me the hormones didn't help

Me: you know I wrote you that letter *sob*

Him: it's okay baby don't hurry just relax
He took out his pocket corner and I wiped my tears but
of course there were more

Me: Okay.. I wrote you that letter because I knew I
would be able to handle it she this moment comes, but
just know that I will love you till the end of my time ,
remember what we said me and you against the world,
my ride or die , whenever I have said those words I
meant them, we have been through so much together , but the gravity of our love
us kept nothing but close , you already now me at my
worst so your stuck with me for the rest of your
life..and I love you baby to the moon and back
Pastor: wow ..the rings

Menzi got up and handed us the rings

Mike: I pledge my to you all that I am and all that I will
ever be as your husband . With this ring I gladly marry
you and join life to yours , I give you this ring as my gift
to you , wear it think of me and know that I love you.
He took out my old ring and place a diamond ring and
a wedding bend at the same time , but I was really
looking because my mans was crying all I
couldn't believe it

Me:I give you this ring as a daily reminder of my love
for you, and that were tied till the end of time , wear it
think of me and know that I love you forever and ever

I slipped the his wedding bend on and he just beamed with happiness

Pastor : well there is nothing more to say ,with the power invested by me I now pronounce you husband and wife â€|â€| you may now ki â€|

Mike didnâ€™t even wait for the pastor to finish he just lifted my veil got under it and kissed , it was like no one was around us and nothing really mattered , we broke the kiss after a stretch of time really and our family cheered as we made our to the drink bar

Him: Wife

Me: husband

We laughed and kiss one more time ,I could feel my baby doing the most with the kick , Mike couldnâ€™t feel anything so he hot under the dress to feel what I felt, I felt his cold hands placed on my tummy and I felt him melt under there , and I was just giggling
Our friends and family came just as he was getting out and they launched

Kayla: getting frisky already

Bee: with these two anything is possible

Me: hai man please leave us alone

They laughed and we had a mini group hug

Tee: canâ€™t believe your married

The girls did they mini dance and twearking session ,

but was funny was that bontle and I had to hold our baby bumps

Marc: stop showing us what crazy things you get up too when weâ€™re not around please

Papa: in front of you after nogal

We laughed and just minded our own bussiness

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Everything went well , the food, the cake everything was perfect , we took loads of picture and to summarise this day we had a dance off, we are weirdos and am spending the rest of my life with mine

Him: let me help dear wife

Me:oh why thank you dear husband

He helped me unzip my dress , this idiot was doing it so slow that it sent shivers down my spine, when he as done , he put his on my boobs slowly caressing them while planting kissing all over me ,trust me my senses were already gone â€¦.the dress dropped and he carried me out of it and placed Me on the bed

Him: how is it that I fall in love with you every minute

I had no answer for that so I just went on to kiss him , just to let him know that the feeling is mutual , itâ€™s funny how I canâ€™t Okay I Imagine my life without him now

Him: tomorrow morning were going to Paris for our honeymoon

He was on top if me but the news excited me that I turned him and I was the one on top and I hit his chest repeatedly and I was busy asking him if he was joking or not

Him: you know your never jokes he makes things happen

Me: yes , yes you do Anderson

He groaned , as I started kissing his neck going down to his abs , he was caressing my ass as I was busy and playing with my folds

Me: thank you for the perfect day

It unexpectedly came out as a whisper , I grinded on him and his erection was already ready for me , I knew he wanted me like I did so why waste time on fore play , he pulled his briefs off and sat on his thighs while giving him a hand job ,(I canâ€™t give him a head because it makes me nauseous) I moved myself up and swiftly let it inside me without any notice I let it all in and my god it felt like it was in my belly but that made me him happy because he groaned and held on to my ass bit tighter ,I began to thrust on him slow because he wouldnâ€™t let me take it out , once the pleasure

kicked in , I held on to the head board and rode him even faster , can you believe he released before me but my orgasm was so close I didnâ€™t stop and his groans were so loud

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

I was laying on top of him busy teasing him

Me: babe you weâ€™re screaming like a little bitch

Him: I was sensitive okay , that was for last the time i am letting you ride me like that shit made me cum so fast

I just busted out laughing how mad he was that he came within 15 minutes, his ego was really bruised

Me: oh come now you know how it feels when I hit my orgasm and you keep on hitting it like there is no tomorrow

He just laughed and grabbed my butt and pinched it

Me: you still cried like a little bitch my love

Him: Lord please intervene

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 75

2 days later

MENZI

Well we are not the ones that got married so we had flew back last night, I have been avoiding the twins I just need to clear my head , I know what I have to do but I just can't bring myself do it , I know it's selfish of me not to talk to them but I think I need a clear when I finally face them , I have a ton of messages from layla and missed calls but I opted to switch of my phone , like I said I will talk to them when I am good and ready

My bother has been pestering to go to them but I just said no and I asked him to back of , mcm as if he will listen

Him: so vele wena you couldn't just go for one pussy yoh went for all of them , greedy bastard

Me: yoh thula please I can't even think with you barking in my ear

Him :please leave your temper at the door ,and you know we have to deal with that Moroccan deal now that Mike is not her

Oh there is that, Mike asked us to handle very high profile dodgy ,he swore that if get should of this item we will have generational wealth , and that what I want for my future family, I don't want to worry whether my family will struggle when I am gone

,thatâ€™s why I didnâ€™t think twice when he asked us ,and my sister will also be benefiting from this so I didnâ€™t think twice when he asked us to handle it.

Him: you know after that I could start a family nje and not worry about a damn thing

Me: we would be set for life whether we like it or not

Him: Bafo we would have proven to our dead best dad that we can survive without him , he always said that we were nothing without him â€|look at us now

Me: am just mad that he took Khanyo down with him , she could've been someone

Him: Kodwa they were warned and they didnâ€™t listen , I forgave sis a long time ago because she was provoked and we had already missed so much of her life that I am not risking anything she is the only close family we have

Me: I know what you mean , I thought I would harbour hate for here after that whole ordeal , but we canâ€™t blame her for her actions to .

Him: exactly , but I hope that we wonâ€™t be going through such anymore well thatâ€™s if Mike doesnâ€™t murder you for dating both the sisters

He laughed and gulped all his whisked and stood

Me: uya'phi I thought were chilling today .

Him: stop using me to run away from your problems , am going see my women today, Tumi is not there so mans is getting pussy today

He said walking away

Me: I see that yoh still think using your little

Him: futsek wena

He walked away and I made an impulsive decision to switch on my phone and I got a flood of messages mostly from Layla but only one from Kayla and it was the first one I opened I couldn't read Layla's messages because I now she is hurting because of me

we need to talk

That was the message from Kayla, I texted her to come over and she just blue ticked me, it's now or never I guess

BONTLE

My pregnancy is going swiftly and right now I am packing, I don't know how the family is going to take this but we have to build our lives right and although our family is here we want to build our lives somewhere different. Jay got a job offer at the US, he said he has been working on getting that job for years now, I initially bought that salon so that I could have a clear path to my future so leaving it behind and have someone else run it for me was not a hard decision, the hardest thing I am going to have to do is saying goodbye to my family, but it has to be done otherwise Jay will feel like he has proved himself to Mike, he finally admitted that is hard living in his brother's shadow and all he wants to do is make a name for himself without mind helping him he is grateful for all he has done for him but it's time for him to become a man and honestly all I can do is support him he promised he will always support my dreams and all I want to do and why not a new adventure right
Jay: all fragile things were packed and stored we will

not be needing them because our house us fully furnished

Me: I guess this is it right

He nodded and hugged me from behind rubbing my growing belly

Me: itâ€™s going to be a hard change but I know you always have my back and I have yours

I suddenly couldnâ€™t feel him anymore , I turned to look at him and he was on one knee

Him: and thatâ€™s why I want you to be my WIFE babe
Excuse me what ,oh my fucking god .

Me: wait your serious oh my god

I was shocked to say the least I always knew that I wanted to marry him but himni was not always sure because well you know how he is

Jay: baby am waiting

Shoot , tears were now falling and I was nodding, he let out he deep sigh and slid the huge rock on my finger(the Andersonâ€™s with big ass diamond rings) he stood up and we hugged

I can't believe it that me reformed BITCH that I am getting married ,this life neh

TUMI

Honestly being in a relationship with Marcus is weird because he is one serious motherfucker but is still funny AF he has that demeanor about him that is just intimidating although he is so gentle with me I sometimes wonder why does he have to ask so macho whenever were at the mall or shopping centre people be looking at us like itâ€™s weird but I know they were looking at him because itâ€™s the dude he literally never smiles in public I and his freinds are the only one that have the pleasure of seeing him smile . Today I am

sleeping over at his place and I think I am ready to do it now,so your girl is initiating sex today (mini vosho) yey donâ€™t judge me itâ€™s been a while phela

Me: how do you like your dinner

Him: itâ€™s so good , what is it that I am eating

Me: tripe babe and itâ€™s good you said you wanted something different

Him: wow it smelled like shit earlier but now I canâ€™t stop eating it i swear it's like something out of this world.

I told you he is an idiot something , after our dinner I went to the bathroom to change into something sexy and I wore my mini gown and I found him doing the dishes , I hugged him form behind and kissed his earlobes

Him: donâ€™t start something and leave me hanging I am still salty that you left me with blue balls the other day

I laughed and turned him over to kiss him ,I was on my toes so that I can reach him he was holding on to my ass but he pushed me off and continued doing the dishes

Me: what now

Him: your not ready for the type of sex I need babe

Whatâ€™s he talking about

Me: care to explain what you mean by that

He turned and leaned on the sink while wiping his

hands with the dish cloth

Him: your just not ready for the type of sex I have and I am not trying to scare you away can we just wait a bit

Me: am lost

Him: to push it babe

He pecked my lips and packed the dishes in the cupboard and stuff

Me: do it

Him: what

Me: do whatever it is you want to do , 'please

The word 'PLEASE' somewhat sent him over the edge because I said it and he closed his eyes as if he wished I had not said it

He stopped everything he was doing and pulled me to the main bedroom , he closed the door and sat in the edge of the bed

Me: Marc

He lifted his finger to shut me up and I complied , he abruptly stood and said 'FUCK TUMI' , I was a bit lost as to what was going on with him , but I was curious AF

Him: see I have a different taste when it comes to sex , yes now and then I like it vanilla but that gets boring over time and i get a bit different

Me: so what do you like

Him: I like being a DOMINANT

Okay what the fuck Marcus

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 76

TUMI

I stood there gobsmacked I didn't know if you was joking but looking at her in our I knew he wasn't he meant each and every word he said. I have read about such things but never came across a person who refers himself is it dominant and I'm not sure if it's something that I can handle because I've read and heard that it can get a bit hectic dominants want people who submit and I for one like being control I don't like losing control and there is something I work through everyday especially now that I'm in a relationship but I just don't know how

Him: are you okay

Is he joking he just dropped that bomb on me and he asks him I am okay ,I suddenly felt the urge to cling on to my gown a bit

Him: I would never make you do something you aren't comfortable with

Me: but eventually your going to get bored of me and move on

I think it hit me after I said it that this could be a deal breaker for him , but I like Marc and I donâ€™t want to lose him , so what do I do , do I give in and see if itâ€™s something that I can handle and just see from there , but those kind of sexual activities scare me I donâ€™t even know what he is into

Him: tell me what your think

Me: why didnâ€™t you tell me

Him: and risk scaring you off

Me: sex is important , men itâ€™s what connects couples and if , ifâ€™.

Him: see why I didnâ€™t want to tell you

Me: Marc sex is important, thatâ€™s how we connect how are we supposed have a relationship without sex

He stared me like I was annoying him (this man mara)

Me: donâ€™t raise your voice at me Tumi
I looked down and he brushed my head and helped me stand up

Him: this is how we connect

He smashed his lips on to me and I was just overwhelmed by the power of the kiss that I wrapped my hands around his neck , and he held in to my waist

Him: don't ever raise your voice at me , I mean it
Tumi

He placed me on the bed and took out his belt and tied my hands , I didn't have it me to protest son I just me him be , not because I couldn't say no but because I was curious as to what he is up to , what's he going to do to me , he took off his shirt

Him: tell me to stop whenever you want me to stop
okay

I nodded

Him: use your fucking words Tumi
Me: I will

He jumped on the bed and had me between his legs , he was kissing me all over and he finally took off my robe and thong simultaneously, he bent and opened my legs and started muffing me like his life depend on it ,he made circles with his tongue and insert his 2 fingers , I arched my back a bit because it was getting too much , I felt my self tense up

Me: ahhh fuck am coming

He stopped and smirked , why the fuck did I tell him , he took of his pants and briefs st the same time ,he opened my legs wider and put them on his shoulders

Him: what did I say

I was in the moment that I didn't answer him

because his hand was rubbing my honey pot

Him: should I stop

Me: no no don't stop

Without any expectation he inserted himself and I gasped , I don't why I thought he would be gentle because that's not his style ,he pounded inserting himself all , I felt it okay ,I fucking felt it , and I couldn't do anyone because my hands were still tied up, he turned me over and Positioned me into a doggy style, he parted my ass so he could have full access, his thrusts were fast and had every intention of making me scream , his groans were loud , I have never experienced such before and it puzzled me for a bit

Him: stop thinking Tumi

He smacked my ass and moaned , the rush of intensity that came through me ,I felt myself squirt, he didn't stop because he needs to cum , my coochie was so sensitive that his thrust made me feel tickly like I was looking my mind

Me: Marc ahhhhhhhhhhh

That was another orgasm

I felt him hold my ass a bit tighter and parted it again and he released inside me (why the fuck did he do that) , he collapsed on top of me and he unbuckled the belt that he tied me with and he spooned me and kissed my earlobe

Me: let's go take a shower

He carried me to the shower and we did our business

in complete silence

WHAT THE FUCK DID I JUST EXPERIENCE

MENZI

It's 23:00 and kayla just walked through the door and sat down No hi .no nothing

Me: drink

I say showing him my glass of cognac
She shakes her head and pats next to her to show me that should sit next to her , I did and gave her a brief hug and we both sighed

Her: you will never love me like you love her right

I really didn't want to do this , but it has to be done , now or never right

Me: I tried

Her: you should have to try

Me: I know

Her: she misses you

Me: I miss her too

Her: you know it won't work right , we tried but it didn't work ,I love you but I love my sister more , and I value myself to stay in a relationship that is not

worth my while....Am sorry but it's the truth.

I really don't know ,what to say ,I am not going to lie and say I was not attracted to them both , inthiyght I could make it work but I didn't , I failed to do so ,I gravitated to layla more , I tried finding excuses as to why I couldn't feel the same for kayla but the answers weren't there it just happened and I just hate that I was not brave enough to tell Kayla to move on

Me: am sorry

That's all I had the courage to say ,I didn't want to utter a word that would hurt her , so I kept it to a minimum

Her: we both know it's for the best , whatever you don't hurt my sister or I swear infill ask mike to castrate you |..and as for me I am going to my mom abroad just to clear my head

Me: don't |.

She cut me off

Her: trust me it's for the best it's for the best for all parties involved , for all of us , I might say go to her but it's with a heavy heart it hurts but it's for the right thing to do

She stood up and so I did , I pulled her for a hug a long lingering hug , she bopped her head to the back and we kissed ,it was a kiss with a while lot of emotions it was heart felt and it was just what we needed , I broke the kiss and hugged her one more time , and walked

her to the door and she left ,I donâ€™t want to say I am relieved but I sure felt lighter would calling Layla now be insensitive ?, I think it is , so I opted to text her instead

*meet me at my favariot spot our my house around 22:00 ,miss you and I love you *

I have to plan the perfect date to apologise for being such a bitch and honeslty i have been feeling like shit for avoiding her , i hope she is not to mad at me because i need her now

ZWELI

I am meeting our negotiator for the merchandise that Mike has us keeping an eye on he said no matter what the price is placed we should always beat it he wants and we should make sure we get it get this straight at this moment were at 90 million and it show that they are only two buyers left ,Mike said the merchandise is way worth the money were going to pay.

Me: why havenâ€™t we gotten the merchandise yet

Him: boss were left with one buyer and he is persist as they come

Me: out but him thatâ€™s simple

Him: he always pull one up on us ,itâ€™s like there is no quit in him , whatever we do he does it better

Fuck man we have to do everything in our power to get that , otherwise mike is going To lose it so I have to

come up with a different strategy to all of this, I have to come up with a better way to all of this

Me: whatâ€™s his name man , the buyer that is left
whatâ€™s his name

He scratched his head

Me: khuluma wena man

Him: eish bossa it's S'CELO NDLOVU

Oh hell No that bastard

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 76

LAYLA

So Kayla is packing and she is leaving tomorrow morning, I asked her to stay but she said no , begging her would just be selfish , she asked me that we donâ€™t talk about their break up I didnâ€™t even attempt because it was going to be weird . I myself am getting ready because I am meeting Menzi

Me: so I am not going to see you when you leave

I say as I am taking a shower

Her: I think its for the best I donâ€™t want to be bawling when I get in the plane

Me: yeah but I could always cancel my plans and take you to the airport

Her: no, donâ€™t I need to this alone

Me: we have always done everything together , how the hell am I supposed to do this

Her: we need the change sis ,donâ€™t make this hard

I got out the shower and wrapped myself with a towel and webt to our room

Me: am going to be left alone in this house , itâ€™s huge and your leaving too

Her: Layla stop please

My phone rang and it was already 01:00 Am and it was my baby

Phone call

Me: babe

Him: am at the gate

Me:what , I thought I was meeting you though

Him: yeah but you took your own sweet time so hurry up

Me:am still naked menz

Him: okay no need to tease me

I laughed you know why I will just grab my things and meet you now now

Him: hurry up my love I missed you

Okay that made me blush , I hanged up and my sister and I had a very long hug

Me: we are going to talk everyday right

She nodded and I pecked her lips and went out

.
. .
. .
. .

Last night was bitter sweet, itâ€™s was bitter because I knew my sister was leaving and but I was so happy that Menzi and I were finally together last night was great , we had no sex at all but a whole lot if talking ,and we were getting to know each from more than the surface , you know pet peeves , our weird addictions the works , we laughed and joked the whole damn night that we fell asleep without noticing. Itâ€™s 9am and I know Kayla left about an hour ago and my man and I are still in bed

Him: what are you think about babe , talk.to your man

I giggled and snuggled a bit closer to him

Me: itâ€™s nothing babe itâ€™s just that am going to miss Kayla so much

Him: yeah itâ€™s gonna be weird without her right

Me: yeah but itâ€™s a start of something new right

He nodded while brushing my hair and I was tracing my hand my fingers on his abs

Me: baby ?

Him: yes my love

Me: I love you

He kissed me my head

Him: I love you too babe my love

This could work just the both of us yoh

MIKE

We're back baby , Paris was fun but we had to cut the honeymoon short because my girl had anxiety about missing too much school see why I love her , and it worked on my favor because I heard Ndlovu is going after the merchandise that I want ,itâ€™s nothing personal I get it but hell will freeze before I let them get it , were about to land and miss sleepy head is out ,thank god she is all buckled up I will wake her up when we land ,right now I have to get back into

business mode , well beast mode if it has to be

.
. .

Me: baby wake up

She groaned and went silent again

Me: baby please wake

Her: ahhh were still flying will you let me sleep
pleeeeeease

Me: we landed 15 minutes ago my love

She stretched her arms and yawned

Her: you couldâ€™ve woken me up you know

I laughed and pecked her lips because I didnâ€™t want
to start a fight with my baby , her hormones are on
over drive, but I know how to manage her she is my
wife after all

Her: baby am so tired ,I think we had too much sex
during this honeymoon

I laughed and I helped her sit up,itâ€™s like her baby
bump grew a whole lot since we went to our honey
moon,we got off the jet and immediately went in a car
that force us home

- .
- .
- .
- .

When we got home I was met by Menzi and our negotiator I immediately that there is something wrong, it wasn't hard to convince fifi to excuse us because she was so tired , flying while pregnant must be really hard ,we went to my study so that we could have proper amount of privacy

Me : what's he doing in that auction , when I researched my competition he was not knthe list

Zweli : yeah it seems like he made a late entry ,and he is gunning for that merchandise men

Guy: yeah we have tried going up with the money but he is not giving in at all

Me: Ndlovu is no where close to my Net worth he might give in if we go higher

Zweli: you know that's not necessary right , we don't have to lose money because if that shit head

Me: I don't need a war in my hands man my WIFE is pregnant

Guy: he will come after the merchandise if you get it he seems desperate for it

Me: fuck this

I really don't want to have a fight in my hands and seems like I am heading for one , I don't want to stress my WIFE with all this shit

Me: I will organize a meeting with him ,I need to get a handle of this mess before it escalates so long make sure we don't lose that auction otherwise am having both your heads as my souvenir

Zweli: hai man you don't have to threaten us we know what we are doing

Me:do you?

Why the hell is he doing this ,because I am pretty sure that he knows now that I want that product

The guys left and I really needed to meet up with him ,finding his contact details was not hard at all so I called him , I need to

Phone call

Me: Ndlovu

Him: who am I talking to

Me: oh cut the bull you know who it is

Him: took you long enough to call me ,oh and am really offended that I didn't get the wedding invite

Me: were not friends, we need to talk

Him: well what do want

Me: face to face ,I donâ€™t deal with bussines over the phone

Him: okay wifey and I are coming to joburg anyway so I will see you soon

Me: good

I hanged up, I swear if he tries to pull some bullshit with me , am going to cut his head off

Her: Mike Anderson where the he are you

Shit!!!! I quickly came out of the office

Me:sheesh babe did you gave to yell

Her: am sorry love , your baby is having a field day in my stomach , itâ€™s been kicking me like crazy

Yep our baby started kicking during the honeymoon and now it's been non stop

Me: donâ€™t call my baby a it please

She laughed and sat down holding her baby bump

Her: am sorry Mr sensitive , so what was the meeting abiut and ease donâ€™t lie to me

Me: okay why would you assume that I would lie to you

Her: because you had a odd looking guy in our house so out with it please

Me: okay okay, I am not sure yet but it seems like I might clash with Ndlovu because we want the same thing right now and i am n

Her:what do you mean clash

Me: just that, he is in the way of what I want and he is not willing to to back down , and go of he continues I will do whatever to make sure that I get what I want

She looked at me shocked

Her: are you trying to give me an early birth

Me: see your always exaggerating

Her:Mike whatever you do, I donâ€™t want any blood spilled please We just got married for God sake

Me: no man am not tho king about killing anyone well thatâ€™s if am not pushed to take that route

Her: Anderson please

Me:baby no no ,I am doing this for us and for our family okay and like I said I am not backing down , so donâ€™t worry your pretty self about anything

Her: donâ€™t patronize me wena ,kopa o sangseleka tuuu

Oh yeah she must be really mad at me now

Me:baby

Her:Mike shut up not now

She went upstairs , I don't care what she says I am doing this and I am not backing down ,I went upstairs and I found her taking a shower in the ensuite

Me: your mad at me

Her: no am scared that's all ,I don't want a war and if you all fight for whatever that is your fighting for that's what is going to happen my love

Me:let me worry about that

Her: baby there is no you anymore ,I am your wife and we have a baby coming, so there is no you but us ,get that through your head please

Me: will you stop shouting, your stressing my baby and I understand but some things I have to do myself

Her: I know that, just be careful babe I have heard of what s'celo does and he sounds like he is in your league

I laughed a little bit

Me: no one is in my level dear wife

I took off my clothes and joined her in the shower

Her: don't get cocky Anderson that will be your downfall

Me: speaking of cocks

Her: i hope your listening to me Mike , I don't want to be a widow am young for that shit

She laughed and kissed me

Me: don't stress okay my love

She nodded and we had a nice warm shower with some love making of course

Yeah am ready for you Ndlovu even if you come guns blazing

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 77

TUMI

Finally fifi is back I really needed to talk to her about my situation , I love aphiwe but we make sense when we are all together, so that's why we are visiting her today, wow She is so pregnant and glowing life has been gentle with her and she is finally getting all that she deserves .

Fifi: hee Tumi your not listening moss wena , are you okay baby

Phiwe: your hun you have been weird this last couple if days

Me: I have a little predicament that I am going through I just donâ€™t know how to handle it

Fifi for up and came to sit next to me and she put her hand on my back

Fifi: talk to us you know were always here for you know that right

I just donâ€™t know why Marc canâ€™t have sex like normal people , with the hell would he find pleasure with such things, but of course he likes being in control , but what he did the other day he said it was nothing yet ,how do I even tell this to my friends this .

Me: I know but I would rather solve this myself

Fifi: okay my love you know weâ€™re here for you right

Phiwe: always

Me: I know thank you so much guys

We continued to have talk and have fun and finally I was not think about Mikeâ€™s sex escapades

.

.
. .
. .
. .

Me: I had to think Marc , I needed the time to think about everything

Marc is pissed of that I have been avoiding him , you would swear I went on without talking him at all

Him: yeah i know but donâ€™t you think talking would help ,so at least I can know what your thinking

Me: stop that

Him: what , stop what

Me: ugggh never mind am here now arenâ€™t I

Him: I would never hurt you , you know that right

I was bowing my head all this time , I just canâ€™t let myself look at him , see one thing about Marcus is that sometimes he has that pull factor that just draws me to him and I canâ€™t help it , and I am scared if I look at him I am just going to submit to everything he says

Me: the other day you said thatâ€™s not even half of the things you do , what did you mean by that

He sighed and sat next to me , while caressing my back

Him: what I mean is that for you to fully understand what is it I get up to in the bedroom am gonna need to train you

I shot up my eyes to look at him

Me: train me

Him: yes , I like certain things to be done in a certain way use certain things to get them done

Me: do you inflict pain ?

I just needed to know hence asked , he rubbed his hands with his hands and chuckled a bit

Him: I donâ€™t inflict pain when I donâ€™t need to, I like control okay , it just â€¦
..you know what letâ€™s leave this while we still like each other please

Me: I need to know these things Marc, I need to know if I can handle all of this , I need to know after your done with me I will not feel violated or used

Him: like I said I would never hurt you

Me: STOP SAYING THAT!!!!

Okay shit I only pissed him off by yelling at him coz the stare I got scared the living shit out of me

Me: am sorry

Him: donâ€™t talk to me like that ever again , I donâ€™t appreciate it at all

Me: am sorry ,am Just frustrated that all

Him : yeah don't lose respect along the way them

His phone ringed and he stood up to go answer it , one thing I have noticed is that when he is mad his Russian accent becomes deep and raspy ,itâ€™s so hot but scary at the same time

Him: yeah â€¦..no I thought Mike was handling thatâ€¦â€¦oh yeah I understand I will see yâ€™all when I arrive thenâ€¦â€¦no I donâ€™t he it with , yeah load it for I donâ€™t he bullets with me

Want the fuck is he talking about and what bullets ,he hanged up and turned to look at me

Him :donâ€™t ask me anything

He helped me stand up and held my waist

Him: your going going to leave me arenâ€™t you

Me: I donâ€™t want to

Him: yes you are , your to sweet and nice for my craziness butâ€¦â€¦

I cut him off with a kiss and I looked at him

Me: show me ,teach me and if it gets too much I will decide what to do, but promise me you will never take advantage of me

Him: I would never do that€|.are you sure

Me: yeah I am sure

He kissed me again and broke the kiss because he had to go to wherever he is going€| am compromising all my morals for Marcus I just hope he is worth it because I can€™t leave him ,because I think I am falling in love with him

MIKE

I am at the office catching up on everything and I just made a payment for my wife€™s tuition fees because they are going back to school on Monday, she is so mad that she has to go back since she feel so heavy now ,she is still uneasy about my meeting today , but I told her to relax and that I was not going to act impulsive at all .

I have a new PA my wife made sure that he is male , she said no more female personal assistants for me , and I understand where she came from because I don€™t want little bits dying around my wife like that .

Jay called me and asked to have dinner with us ,I wonder what€™s going on he has been keeping to himself lately, my sister has moved to live with my pregnant mother, and my other sister is still in a relationship with Menzi (my family is a whole mess) but as long as that are safe the rest They have to figure out themselves ,I still don€™t like this relationship between Menzi and layla

I was still going about my work I had a lot to catch up on ,my PA called to tell me that I had visitors ,who could it be because my meeting with s'celo was later .

After a few moments a knock came through and it was him , his presence filled the room ,I didnâ€™t have to loom to see that it was him

Me: am pretty sure itâ€™s not 17:00

Him: I just couldnâ€™t wait any longer you know my body has been itching the entire day

Me: so what you wanted to satisfy your itch , impatient men I see

Him: why donâ€™t you just give up, you know am not going to give up on that merchandise

Me: donâ€™t make me laugh men , you know am not doing that shit

I finally closed my laptop and looked at him dead in the eye

Me: so you leave ,you will never succeed against me Ndlovu, I am not what your used toâ€™.see you wasted time trying to be the good guy â€™..oh I Clean up the streets , where the fuck did that get you too

Him: say whatever I am not giving in , and I dare you to come after my family I will blow your brains out

Me: am no coward, I will never threaten innocent life , I am a men if am going to come at you am coming at you straight and head on

I stood up and poured myself a glass of cognac and gulped the drinking one go , he was kissing me off and I wanted to calm myself from his bullshit ,does this men who the fuck I am ?

Him: so your not letting this go and I am not letting it go too, what to do huh?

Me: your starting to piss me off really and donâ€™t make the mistake of making your problems mine ,how I get that merchandise is non of yiur business and same applies to me and tell me whatâ€™s stopping me from Shooting your head now

Him: because I have a hit placed on you know , I dare you to try me and you will be out in a split second

I laughed and drank another glass

Me: you really think I donâ€™t have a hit in you ,how stupid do you think I am , Ndlovu

I turned and I hard shuffling I took out my gun from the back of my hands and turned to pint the gun at him but he also had his gun out pointing at me

Him: am always prepared

Me: same applies

REFILWE

I have been working out, after aphiwe and Tumi left I just started working out, this thing with Mike is stressing me out , I really wanted peace but with the

men I am married to peace is short lived , and there is abosuluty nothing I can do but always support him he is my husband after all â€¦.after my workout session ,I took a quick , lotioned myself and I wore my tracksuits just to be comfortable I donâ€™t know something in me was unsettled it was like something is Happening or itâ€™s about to happen and Iâ€™ve learnt to listen to my gut or whatever feeling that I get it has always helped me and Iâ€™m not about to ignore it or be oblivious to it now and I new getting married to Mike was gonna come with a lot of challenges hands I am not shaking or scared I am just worried something would happen to us or one of our family members I was having crackers and whip cream when the door went off ,it canâ€™t be Mike because he never knocks to save his life â€¦..I went to the door to open and I found palesa at the door looking sensational as always ,I let her in and offered her a seat and she did sit and I also sat and continued to eat

Me: this is a nice surprise

She crossed her legs and smailed at me ,I think I know very well whay she is here but I will humor her and say nothing

Her: I thought I would pop by and talk you know

Me: talk !??? , talk about what

Her: talk to your husband to let go, I tried persuading my husband but he is not budging at all

Me: and what makes you think my husband will listen

She clasped her hands and looked at me

Her: don't yet this start because we both know where this is going to lead ,and it won't be pretty and am pretty sure you know what me and my husband are capable of

Me: you don't scare me palesa

Her: you should be

Me: you think you know me wena neh ,you know nothing about me , I am not getting involved because this is my husband's business but if you get in involved and push me , you won't even have to nudge me to be all up in your face I will do it willingly

Her: okay I hear you but just know that I have been longer in the field I know more than you will ever know

She stood up and went to the door and I followed her and opened the door for her

Me: you may have been in the field longer than I have been , but you know that only means you have more skeletons in the closet than I do , get involved in this and I won't hesitate to bring you down both with your husband

I shut the door and went back to watch TV , see this is already getting out of hand and I am 5 and 3 weeks pregnant ,I really don't need this ,but I will not leave it laying down , I did say for better or for worse right

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Phone call

Me: send me that file ,I think I might just need it sooner than I thought

Him: what I thought you guys are cool

Me: I told you power struggle would come to play ,and I know thatâ€™s weâ€™re we would clash

Him: okay I will send the file to you

Me: make sure you encrypt the file and make sure my laptop is protected okay I donâ€™t want nasty surprises

Him: on it

Me: you will get your payment soon all so done

I hanged up

Him: see your busy my love

I laughed and turned to see my husband leaning on the door

Me:you look exhausted baby

Him:thatâ€™s because I am

I pulled Him , helped him loosen his tie , I then made him sit down on the bed and I kneeled behind and massaged his shoulders

Me:is he the reason your so tense baby

Him: he is not backing down babe ,we had a showdown at the office today

Me: the wife paid me a visit today and you know what do not back down at all , I give zero fucks as to what happens that you get there

He pulled me to sit in his lap and we kissed .

Him: how is my baby doing in there

Me: I need this baby out of me as in now

He laughed and layed on the bed and covered himself with my shirt to talk to his baby , and I was caressing his back , and I guess we fell asleep Like that because we dosed off .

Guys please like ,I have over 2k people reach my page, please like I would really appreciate it , because it takes time to type but I still do it because I want you guys to have something please like and comment

I will appreciate flying participation

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 78

MIKE

I know I can do this but I really don't want a war to out of this ,some what I did was that I dropped out of the auction and when they deliver the I will hit their delivery, but I have to make sure that it's a clean job ,thing is this types of deliveries take time because they have to make sure they make it makes it through customs , for now I will keep an eye out for them , if Ndlovu thinks I am going to take this laying down they have another thing coming .

Her: ughhh I really don't want to go back to school , look at me

She is standing on front of the mirror naked looking at Herself

Me: baby you look perfect

Her: I how they allow me to eat in class because your baby has me hungry all the damn time

Just then her phone rings and she hurries to answer it

Her: yes '..you got'..yeah yeah yeah I will pay once I know that your information is credible am not stupid you know '..Okay cool I have class

She hangs up and carries on about her business
leaving me hanging

Me: and that ??!

Her:what

Me: baby donâ€™t play me , what was that

Her: oh am gathering information on palesa

Me: wait!!!! I thought you guys were friends though

Her: I thought so too but she asked me to convince you
to pull out of that deal your doing , she had all type if
threats like â€œoh I have been in the field longer than
you blah blah blah â€œ I think she basically threatened
me the nerve

Me: i have already pulled out of that deal

She turns to me and holds her waist

Her: excuse me what â€¦.why would you do that

Me: sâ€™celo is making it hard to close that deal so I
am going to take it from him for making me work this
hard for it

She sighs and then dresses up

Her: I hate this , itâ€™s going to get messy I just know it

Me: hey donâ€™t worry about this okay I will deal with

it

Her: you better and we have a doctor's appointment today

Me: you know I wouldn't miss it | ..your sister and Jay are having so her with us today | they say they have something to tell us

Her: yeah and it seems pretty important | ..all done

Me: see you look good ,you can still rock anything my baby

She had on a shirt-dress ,that was loose enough for her to breath but short enough to be sexy , and she wore Jordan's took her nikey bag for books

Me: and am taking to school ,I will come and pick you up for the doctors appointment

Her: someone's in the good mood

She comes and sits on my lap and gives me a few kisses all over my face

Me: can't I be nice to my wife

Her: it's still weird when you say it huh, me a whole wife

She takes up her stuff and I wear a vest so I can take her to school today I am not going to work because they are doing audits

.
. .
. .

Me: and there we are

She sighs so loudly causing me to laugh, she really doesn't like school at this moment

Me: you will be fine

Her: I know it's just going to be a long ass day with people starring

Me: my love relax

She pecked my lips and walked out , I got a call from Marcus

Phone call

Me: talk to me

Him: that's a shitty way to answer your phone you know

I laughed and focused on the road because the phone was connected to the Bluetooth

Me: you actually forget who your talking to ,so what's up

Him: okay so the merchandise has already passed customs man were going to have to hit sooner than we

expected

Me: so what do it, and make sure yâ€™™ all have extra security and have 5 men watch over my wife okay

Him: no stress boss, do you want to join us

Me: Marc I have a pregnant wife , do you want me to die

He laughed

Him: I hope I never become whipped like you are dude

Me: get your girlfriend pregnant then you will see

Him: yeah thatâ€™™s not happening anytime soon

.
. .

I just bought a whole lot of baby stuff and I also bought stuff for the nursery , I actually like being in schedule ,I go to a restaurant to have a late breakfast

Em: hi what would you like to have

Wow she still works here

Me: hi Em

She shoots up her eyes and looks at me ,she puts her note pad and sighs

Me: are you okay

Em: my feet are killing me â€¦.I heard your married now

Me:yeah I am

I say flashing my wedding bend at her

Me: so how are you doing

Em: I am living such a shit life ,everything is on shambles and my dad wants nothing to do with me

Me: life will humble you wonâ€™t it â€¦.can I please tour breakfast special and a latte please..... to go

She looked surprised at my coldness , but to be honest I canâ€™t be entertaining other woman while I have a wife that I respect and love ,so after she came with my order I paid and made sure that I leave a tip for her , and left .

REFILWE

My Day was really tiring ,but phiwe and Tumi always find a way to cheer me up ,because weâ€™re having dinner with my sister, I decided to take an uber to Woolworths just to buy a few ingredients , I have been learning how to cool bit by bit, I am not as good as my husband my I try

Tumi: well you shouldnâ€™t by that brand if you want the perfect pie

Me: does it matter which margarine do I buy

Them: yes!!

Me: donâ€™t bite my head jeez

So I bought the margarine they suggested, and a couple of stuff

We skipped the doctors appointment because i was late ,he was so mad

.
. .
. .
. .

Well Mike instead the chef to cook because I canâ€™t stand for to long , I wanted to bite his head off but I went against that and followed my better judgement

Me: hey babe did you know that sâ€™celo and palesa killed their own cousin

Him :baby we killed my father and tour father
We just busted out laughing

Me: damn okay okay were no better than them but I wonder why they did though

Him: please stop with your digging just focus on school and our baby

Me: okay

We went downstairs and everything was already , let

me be honest I loved my life before but being rich makes life so much easier, after 10 minutes Bontle and Jay came and my sister was glowing frinbjbg and shit
Me: and then

I said taking a seat next to my husband
Jay: and then what

Bee: kana wena o rata ditaba , were just here for dinner

We dished up for ourselves talking about this and that but no man something was brewing because my sister kept on giving me nervous glances

Me: okay sis spill

Mike: baby relax.
Hi hit his arm

Jay: okay okay we do have something to say.

Bontle just blatantly cut him off

Bee: were moving and were going overseas and were getting married

After she said that she covered her mouth, and I then noticed the huge rock on her finger , Mike congratulated them and I was still stuck on the fact that they are moving, I guess that kept me on my tracks a bit with my mouth opened a bit

Bee: sis

Jay: I know it's sudden but I got a job there and I can't leave with your my mini family

I nodded my head to show that I understand but I was actually sad that my sister is moving, I had imagined that we would raise our kids together , help each other since we have no mothers but I figured together we would be able to cope but now she is moving and I can't be selfish and be angry at her ,she is finally happy and I would be a horrible person if I stood in front of her happiness

Mike: hey baby don't cry we will visit

Shit I didn't even notice that I was crying , I quickly wiped them and went to hug my sister ,like I said I won't be selfish just like I am happy and content with my life She should have the same .

TUMI

Like I said I wanted Marc to show me so he said tonight was the night , I just got to his apartment and I went straight to change to wear what I was told to wear , he said I should wear anything white as long as it lingerie , and that I should be barefoot, I don't even know if he is in or not but I was told that I shouldn't even dare to be late , at 20:00 I should be done with everything , after changing I went I didn't even put make up on I just had no time , after I was done I went to sit in the bed and I browsed my Instagram , you know when you feel like some ones watching I felt like that , when I turned he was leaning on the door frame , with his black ripped jeans, it was unzipped and not buttoned,

his V was showing and he has abs for days yoh , after I saw him put my phone away and just stayed silent , he walked in and gave me a peck

Him: am not going to do anything heavy okay so donâ€™t be scared

Me: okay

I was suddenly nervous , he told me I should kneel in front of him and my butt should sit on my legs , I did as told ,he helped me with my posture and I should apparently find a respectable way to address him when we doing the deed

Me: so what do you prefer

He chuckled a bit , I was still sit to g in that position

Him: just anything that comes to mind when I fuck you

I swallowed my saliva a bit

Me: is this the only type of sex were going to be having

He looks at me a bit like he is you g to regret what he is about to say

Him: I will make an exception here and there going

Me: okay

Him:okay you can stand now

I do and he takes my hand to this room that is always locked and I mean always , I guess I get to see it today , holy hell ,this room had everything kinky ,ropes all over ,suspenders , toys , whips I was shit scared now

Him: am not going to use everything here , relax am still introducing you too all of this

Me: please don't hurt me

He turned me to look at him

Him: I will never hurt you okay

He kissed my nose

Me: why were teaching me how to sit and working on my posture

Him: that's when for when your full trained for this , will address it all later ,and so you know I just want something who is going to submit to me I don't want a slave okay

I nodded , we walked deeper in the room, he asked me to take off my lingerie and kneel again ,he clasped a choker around my neck with his name on it , oh he want me to call him MASTER ,that shut is not happening yoh | after our little talk ,I was still kneeling ,who he cover my eyes with a silk cloth he carried and put me on what left like a leather bench , I left him clasp close something on my left leg then the other on my right leg , jeez he had both my legs belted , I felt kisses all over my thighs and his hand was rubbing my honey pot, he was so gentle that to I point

that I questioned why he is into all of this

I did I say gentle yeah right that didn't last long he just flipped me over with whatever that is tied to my legs and out me in a doggy position ,I don't want to like this but my body is betraying because I can feel that I am dripping down there , I heard shuffling and movement a bit , as I was still waiting I felt him enter me , I was so we he slid right in and I mean all of it , he was not slow at all because man was pounding on me like his life depended on it , he flipped me over and he adjusted that thing oh his and it had me spread my legs wide open ,I heard him groan a bit ,he thrust in again , I have had sex before but never like this it was like he was hitting and surpassing my G-stop causing me to have an orgasm every after 10 minutes , I don't want to lie , I felt pain here and there but the pleasure was on 100 shame ,he stopped while I was about to have my orgasm

Him: what did I say you should call me

I bit my lower , he removed himself a bit but not fully

Him: what did I say you call me TEE

He is so evil

Me: please don't

He removed himself a bit again and I panicked I didn't want him to

Me: m| .master your my master baby

Yep that sent him to overdrive because I fucked so hard I think I went to heaven and came back,I tried to hold his ass but he pinned my hands over my head and continued

.
. .
. .
. .

Me: I can't feel my lower body parts

He laughed and snuggled me closer to Him, were now in bed after a long shower and him massaging me

Him: you will get used to it

Me: is there more to what you did to me

Him: yes ,but let's not talk about that

Me:one more question, why master ?

Him: simple , because I am

I laughed and just shook my head and Laid my head on his chest listening to his heart beat ,Marc changed after our session and he was his sweet and idiotic self again ,maybe I can handle this , am only a submissive in the bedroom moss and he promised me that he will never go over my limit or make me do something that I am not comfortable with and I trust him call me stupid but sex on suspenders does not sound bad (okay am joking)

A WEEK LATER

S'CELO (ONE time POV)

Jeses I have dealt with a whole lot of people but Anderson he is on another level including that wife of his but j need that merchandise itâ€™s going to help a lot with me securing my families future ,the kids are at home with my mom .

.
.

Something is suspicious as to what he just let it go but itâ€™s coming now and we have to fly back to cape town my job here is done

Me: hey babe do you think he really just le it go

Her: possibly, I might have had a talk with the wife

Me: babe I told you to butt out my Pali

Her: and have I ever listened

Me: haiâ€™suka I give up mna

I took a quick shower while wifey was packing up

Her: babe phone itâ€™s llyod

I hurried out and answered he didnâ€™t greet or anything

Phone call

Him: we were hit man ,they tool everything

Me: what the fuck you mean

Him: itâ€™s like they were waiting for us, they attacked and it was least expected , we werenâ€™t using customary roads so we thought we were okay but nah the person that hit us is highly skilled because we canâ€™t even track that shit

I threw my phone across the room

Me: uyaâ€™ndinyela lo mfana yoh

Her: whatâ€™s going on

Fuck thatâ€™s why he gave in so easy because he knew that he would hit when I was not thinking about it he knew he would get me when I was least expecting it , but that freaking man is smart I have to tread carefully I have kids now I canâ€™t be reckless and I too will hit when least expects it and I swear he wonâ€™t see me coming

*someone please warn sâ€™celo please *

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 79

NARRATED

3months LATER

Well things have not been going good at mikes Warehouse all of his deliveries have been taken before they could reach his Warehouse he knows exactly whoâ€™s doing this but he is waiting for his wife to give birth because she does not want to leave her stranded and pregnant she made him promise that he will not do anything until she can help him and like an understanding husband he is doing as told. But that does not mean that he has not been doing anything in fact this gave him the perfect opportunity to plan his comeback and your revenge well him and the Brothers have been plotting against S'celo ever since he has been starting to take their deliveries and him taking his stuff has been made it impossible for Mike to make any profit from his underground business well obviously it has not hit the pocket that much but he is still not making money and thatâ€™s pissing him off and so whatever happens the revenge is gonna be sweet and cost him a lot of money because thatâ€™s what he has been doing to make.

MENZI

My relationship with Layla has been good although we have had to work on some of her insecurities other than that and everything is perfect we have grown so close and we spend literally all our free time together maybe I was meant to be with her and not them together Kyla and I still talk but in a totally platonic way and we donâ€™t talk everyday and Layla is aware

of our conversations I have had to assure her that she is enough for me and no other woman is all were compared to her because she is all that I need

Me: did you find a apartment you like

She has been complaining that the house is too big for her and she is sometimes scared when am not with her

Her: yes I did , all I have to do is make a down payment then pay the moths rent

She is sitting on the table and I am in between her thighs and I am caressing the sides

Me: why wonâ€™t you just live with me

Her: are you nuts so that you can fuck me everyday
â€™.no thank you and you have to marry me first

Me: then marry me

She laughed and kissed my forehead

Me: stop doing that

She has picked up this tendency of always kissing my fore head

Her: stop fighting me and baby when weâ€™re good and ready I will glad my marry you

Me: so no snopping in my phone anymore

She looked down embarrassed

Her: yeah I promise I don't do that again

Me: because?

Her: because I am enough for you

Me: and

Her: and you love me just as much as I love you

Me: and I will never

Her: you will never hurt me

Me: and I better not catch you

Her: and you better not catch me with some boy or you will kill us both

Me: exactly my love so , I love you very much

Her: so baby your coming with me tonight right

Me: you know it , make sure we have dinner and snacks right my baby

Her: I will order in I don't want you having a stomach bug again and popping the entire day

She laughed

Me: baby don't laugh you almost killed me with your beef curry

Yeah she tried cooking it was awful but like the good boyfriend that I am I tried eating to tell you that I had spent the whole at the toilet

Her: I didn't â€¦.*laugh* it was not on purpose my baby I tried because you insisted after I told you countless time that I can't cook

I laughed and kissed her thigh

Me: babe you had YouTube with all the ingredients

Her: baby don't be like that and never tell anyone that I almost killed you

Voice: then you would have saved me the energy for me killing him

Shit Mike still doesn't like that were together , he hates that we even drove Kayla away

Me: geez you don't knock anymore

Mike: yeah knocking has never been my thing , why aren't you working

Me: am on my lunch break and Mike don't question my work you know I do a damn good job

Her: baby I think I should go ,text me

Me: I will

She kissed my cheek and jumped off the table, on her way out She kissed her brother's cheek when she went out.

Me: look man I don't know what..

He raised his hand to stop me from talking

Him: looking quite clear that I can't stop you from dating my sister at all, and I see how happy she is even though it's at the cost of Kayla's happiness, I swear Menzi if you play my sister or hurt her I will personally kill you, don't lay your hands on her and don't even think of disrespecting her, I hope you get that, Layla is fragile men she hurts easy, hurt her and I take out your ribs one by one

He was staring at me dead on

Him: I hope I made myself clear

He gulped my whiskey and sat down, this guy mars

Me: we need to hit the club soon I have been couped up in the house for way too long

Him: me too but don't tell my wife that tho

We laughed (don't look at us like that we bro after all we don't fight for that long)

Me: I like how my sister had you by the balls is refreshing

He threw a pen at me and we laughed

Him: invite Zweli and Marcus

Me: of course I can't go out with you alone your do bloody broody

Him: fuck off Menzi and don't forget what I said you

Me: like you would let me forget

Him: damn straight I won't let you

He left Mike is too protective and I really don't mind because I am not planning on hurting his sister at all

.
. .
. .

Me: babe

I just got to her place for the final sleep over in this house .after a few minutes of me calling her she came downstairs

Me: you look ready for movie night

Her: yes ,yes I am

Me: so what are we watching

Her: I have never seen any of the fifty shades franchise

, so I downloaded them

Me: yeah your trying to make me horny I see
She laughed and helped me get comfortable , we sat
down with snacks and food

Me: and please blame the movies of whatâ€™s going to
happen after

She snuggled closer to me and giggled a bit as we
watched the movies

NEXT DAY

TUMI

My life is LIT thatâ€™s an appropriate way to say it
anyway ,I have been doing things that I very foreign to
me but I love them , itâ€™s hard to comprehend some
of the things we do but hey itâ€™s life right ,and I also
had promise him that I will never tell anyone of out sex
escapades ,last night I think was the best one yet , he
was â€œpunishingâ€ me because I was late , he said I
should be ready by 19:00 but I was only ready at 20:00
my was whipped with a whip and my honey pot was
fucked yoh, but thatâ€™s just Marc in the bedroom out
of the bedroom my men is sweet loving and my teddy
bear , I thought I would not be able to handle him but I
can and I am sort of used to it now and like he
promised he never pushed me to anything that I am not
comfortable with .

- .
- .
- .
- .

.

Itâ€™s just after class and aphiwe and we are costing fifi since she is not coming to class anymore â€¦ we were welcomed by fresh treats and freshly squeezed juice and baby mama was doing her stretches

Me: even when pregnant you put us to shame

We all laughed but no joke she still works out when pregnant , I would be lazy AF

Aphiwe: after you pop that baby am joining you in the gym

Fifi: as long as you donâ€™t slow me down , I need my body backâ€¦.no offence baby

She said rubbing her tummy and moved to doing squats

Phiwe: just donâ€™t over to it We donâ€™t want you straining buttercup

Mike walked in and put his things away neatly , I thing I have noticed is that Mike is a neat freak

Him: donâ€™t call my baby that

Phiwe: say whatever but he is what he is

Me: what if itâ€™s a girl

Fifi: I hope itâ€™s a boy

Him: it has to be a girl

Phiwe: yeah tell me why we don't know the gender

Tee: they wanted it to be a surprise aphiwe

Phiwe: that's white people things

We laughed and Mike hit aphiwe with a pillow

Him: y'all need to stop and baby why you laughing! .daaaaaamn

Fifi had done a split , I can't do that shit and I am not pregnant

Fifi: that god I still got it

Him: yes you do babe !.I should go

You know the eyes are naughty AF I couldn't help but notice he was erect when he saw his wife doing a split he hurriedly left the room , we waited for the door to be closed shut and once we heard him close the door we all laughed

Phiwe: you have a strong effect mgani shame

Fifi: I have that baby mama effect niya bon na

She joined us on the couch and we sat talked, laughed and was just catching up nje , I love my friends shame

MIKE

I can't believe I had an erection in front of my wife friends, I took a quick shower , wore my cargo shorts and chilled in the bed , my legal business is doing good I have no complaints with that one but my underground, that sâ€™celo is putting a dent on my numbers , but I don't want to stress out my wife so am I letting him be , I won't be as nice when my wife has given birth , I don't want her stress to be the cause if us losing our baby â€|.zweli just emailed me that our weapon shipment has been hijacked and yes it's sâ€™celo , I think he is pushing it now and he is Ben g relentless with his attacks ,I threw my phone across the room ,frustration is now kicking in no one likes losing money especially me

Her: that phone dis nothing to you

She walked in our room

Me: your friends gone?

She nodded and came and snuggled closer to me

Her: is it costing you a lot

Me: a lot babe ,he is mad and it shows at how relentless he is

Since ever I took his merchandise he has been hurting my shipment week after week after week and because I don't want to hurt back at this moment there is nothing that I can do about it but what you do it but like I said payback will be bitch

Her:am sorry you have to wait

Me: don't worry babe it gives me time to think so don't worry about okay

Her: still I wish you didn't have to wait

Me: you know this is my baby too and I need the baby safe and sound, I don't want you stressed and all tense okay so relax my love all is well ..for now

I rubbed her now big belly ,everything I do I do for them so why should I compromise their safety

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 80

ZWELI

It's a biys night out today finally, this celo situation has been stressing me out and the fact that Mike is so chilled about it makes me more mad , but he is a man with he plan so I am relaxing for now ,he has shared his plans with me and to be honest he deserves more than what he is going to get , see Mike has a heart even though he is so hard core

.
. .

Her: baby control yourself please

Me: haibo aphiwe you donâ€™t trust me

Me: I do ..just donâ€™t look at any ass okay

I laughed , one would swear that I have once cheated on aphiwe before the way she is so stressed and if I have she would never find out about it

Me: okay baby relax wethu you will give yourself wrinkle on that pretty face of yours

She crotched her nose and pouted and I just kissed her pout

Her: okay babe , I love you okay

Me:and I love you too sthadwasam

Her: kiss kiss

She giggles

Her: I (peck) love (peck) you(peck) so(peck) much(peck) (peck)

I laughed and kissed her right

Me: now I can go

I spanked her ass and left

.
. .
. .
. .

.

It was a vibe ,we had drinks, cigars and stopped a dancing for us (it was my idea okay were not touching)

Marc: oh yeah I needed this

Mike: what trouble on paradise ready .

he says puffing his cigar

Marc: nah itâ€™s not that but I needed a guys night out.

Mike: I know what you mean I love my wife but her hormones drive me over the edge sometimes

We laugh at him because my sister will yell at you for not answering her the way she wants or she will ask for something and change her mind in a spilt second

Me: yeah you have it tough men

Marc : she is one feisty girl

Mike: oh Shut it stop talking about my wife

We laughed ,we continued watching the girls dancing over meaningless chatter

Marc: I canâ€™t wait till we hit that guy I think he thinks we have gone soft

Menzi: they are having a field day with your merch

Mike:I know ,I hope he is not gullible to think that I

donâ€™t notice what the fuck he is doing

Me: someone with a family he is sure playing a dangerous game

Mike: I would never go after his family what animal do you guys think I am

We all look at him ,and we bust out just laughing how dare he say that

Menzi: the worst kind

Marc : yeah the very worst kind

Me: men you killed your dad

Mike: the mother fucker deserved to die

Us:see

We laughed again

Me: heartless prick you and my sister were made for each other

Mike: damn straight

We do continued drinking and enjoying the show that the ladies were giving is

Menzi: so Marc how is it in chocolateville

Mike: yah you have been a secretive bastard whatâ€™s

with that

One thing you should know is that men gossip just as hard if not harder

Menzi: yebo khuluma ndoda

Marc: everything is fine what do you want me to say

Me: no man Mark wena you always want details down to knowing what condom we used but wena always a closed book

We all laugh, yeah Marc is very nosey but likes to keep his news to himself

Mike: and you wanna be all secretive

Menzi: speak

He stopped on his drink and shook his head

Marc: BDSM

So Mike choked on his cognac ,Menzi mouth is agape , and I almost burnt myself with a cigar

Menzi: did you say BDSM

He nodded and continued drinking

Mike: what the fuck men

Marc: hay hay hay don't ask question but yeah me

and my lady enjoy a particular type of sex

We all gave him I donâ€™t believe that shit look and that made him laugh

Him: oh fuck all of you ,okay yes I was the one to introduce her to it but she fucking loves it

Menzi: weeeeeeeee!!!! Marcus the poor girl

Mike: your one to talk

I couldnâ€™t help but laugh so hard at my brother, Mike always has comebacks for Menzi

Marc: ohhh snap

Menzi: you will never forget will you

Mike shook his head and chuckled

Marc: I mean if you fucked both my sister I would never forget that shit

This guy is always creating shit for Menzi lol

Menzi: Shut up wena

We laughed when Mikeâ€™s phone cried â€œshit â€œ he cursed he answered his phone and I guess he accidentally pressed speaker when my sister went off on him

Her: MIKE ANDERSON GET YOUR ASS HERE

AHHHHHHHH YOUR FUCKING BABY IS COMING
MIIIIIIKE HURRY

MIKE

We all became sober the same time ,I was driving lie I was chased by a police ,we arrived at the house and I could here her breathing from the other room , I saw that she had already packed stuff that she was going to need , she walked back in the lounge doing her breathing exercises , the boys and I were stuck in our trucks

Her: MIKE get stupid bags in the car if you donâ€™t want me to give birth here

She walked inside the bathroom I donâ€™t know to do what, we gathered everything and we changed cars to a portable car , we left and it was just Zweli and me , Zweli was helping her get comfortable and I was driving I donâ€™t like who because I want my baby to have a safe delivery

Her: MIKE baby please hurry up

Zweli: yhuuu hai fifi relax nawe please breath sis breath

We finally got to the hospital ,we didnâ€™t struggle getting help

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

I don't know if I was emotional or tired but I was looking my baby girl in my hands and I was crying to ,my wife is shit tired and has been sleeping , it's around 3am I told Zweli he can come back in the morning he needs rest , I can tell she is a sweet heart , I can't help but fall in love with my baby she looks like her mom this traitor , she has her eyes and her cute little lips , but I think she has my eyes no man how can you not fall for such perfection.

.
. .

Her: babe

Her soft re so made me smile as I sat up from the mini couch I was sleeping on , I looked to the side and our baby was changed in her clothes (thank god for private hospitals) , I went to mami's side , she made space for me ,we snuggled for a bit ,I helped her sit up a bit and handed our princess to her , her eyes lit up when she saw her

Her:she is so tiny

She says while playing either her fisted hands

Me: I think she looks like you

It's goes silent a bit

Her: we have to name her

Me: Aurora

Her: lesedi

Us: Aurora lesedi Anderson

Me: itâ€™s perfect

Her: you will deal with all the documentation needed right

Me : yeah I will you just relax

The nurse came and helped my wife with breastfeeding , when she started sucking on that boob fifi flinched a bit

Her: this shut hurts

Nurse: you will get used to it as time goes now your breast are still sensitive

Her: okay

Nurse: and you you have quite the entourage should I let them in

Me: oh yes but ease and time to be quiet okay

Nurse : absolutely

I didnâ€™t think life would be perfect but thus sight I am looking at is everything nothing in the world mattered to me than these two humans I am looking at

.
.

.

We faced time Jay and bontle and her dad too who couldnâ€™t make it because of the renovations at his house by they will all happy and excited for us

Phiwe: yeah Mike she looks nothing like you thank god for that

Me: you live off of teasing me neh

Fifi: phiwe stop harassing my husband please

Tee: youâ€™re a mother now babe how do you feel

Fifi: am exhausted but I am happy nothing beats this

The boys have been stating at aurora ever since they got her â€œshe is so tinyâ€ Marc said â€œ thank god she is not white white â€œ Zweli said â€œI couldnâ€™t just half her for the whole day â€œ Menzi said

Layla : she looks somewhat like your baby pictures Mikey but more cute

Me: please stop dissing me please

We continued chilling worked something so that they could stay longer I know fifi didnâ€™t want them to go , after literally a few hours I was just talking and chilling and admiring the baby they finally left and fifi was surprised that she also got her discharge papers she was happy about that I wanted her to be at home and heal properly.

REFILWE

Breastfeeding is magical, it's like you get to keep a bond with your baby that you had when she was still inside of you ,I was so used to being pregnant that it felt weird now that I am not but breastfeeding just soothes me , even though baby girl sucks my tit so hard sometimes that it just want thanks to my far long husband I am at the comfort of my own bed now

Him: I can't get over how tiny she is
I laughed a bit

Me: well savour this moment while you can because soon you will be chasing boys away from her

Him: what no .I am turning her into a nun, no boy is touching her

I could help but laugh at my baby's crazy dad ,after feeding her I burped her and she was out , I put her in her cot folded with a whole lot of blankets

Me: I want her to sleep her with us until I am ready to let go

We're snuggling in bed and I am laying my head on his chest

Him: yeah I think I will sleep easy knowing she is next to us

Me: look at you being a softie and everything

He kissed my forehead and chuckled

Him: let a rest what if she hasn't shown her true colours yet

We both laughed softly and slept

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 81

REFILWE

Did I say she was an angel no , no lady here was a demon she has been crying since 1am till now and its 4am , I changed her diaper, and I am now feeding her night nope she is not sleeping ,isn't she a bit to young to have insomnia and his stupid dad is sleeping (okay he is not stupid am just a bit cranky).

Me: oh baby please rep for mommy

I started rocking her back and forth and she was now yawning but she was fighting her sleep

Me: your such a little devil ,why can't you just sleep my baby

I was the one yawning now am hella tired and baby girl is just sucking her fist ! I decided to get in bed with her and hold her while I sleep I will be careful

.

.
. .

I must have dozed off because I can't feel aurora in my arms ,I sprawled on the bed and stretched

Him: hi mommy

I looked across the room and he just got out the shower , I looked at auroras for and she was sleeping with her pink teddy bear next to her , Traitor

Me: hi baby when did you take , she was being a little fussy at night or should okay this morning .

Him: I took her about 4 hours ago

Me: what time is it

Him: my love it's 13:00

Me: Shut the front door, did I starve my baby

Him: hey hey don't worry she has been sleeping her since I took her from you, your food is in the microwave and I changed her diaper so everything is okay

He put one knee on the bed and pecked my lips, god I have a great husband yoh

Me: thanks babe

I hurriedly took a shower ,wore my shorts and his shirt, my stomach is still a little big , my ass is so huge and my

boobs are full AF but hey results of having a baby , I went downstairs and I ate I was starving ,Mike came downstairs wearing his boxers and vest

Me: not going to work

Him: nope I took a maternity leave

I couldn't help but laugh

Me: am the one who pushed your baby's big head what are you talking about

Him: she doesn't have a big head okay and I think we should do this together

Me: yeah thanks my love ,I love you ,I love you

He puts the monitor on the table and sits on the kitchen counter , he puts out his mouth and I just peck him ,he laughs and shakes his head and I give him a proper kiss

Me: your such baby

Him: hey watch it

I giggled and took a spoon full of food

Me: so my love what are you going to do about Mr N

He turns and gives me a warning look

Me: I just want to know what your planning..... baby

can't you just warn him to back off don't hurt the men
he has a family

Him: see why I didn't want to tell you and my love I
love you but I don't want to hear it

Me: baby please We just had a baby

Him: and you will both be safe because am going to
cape town tomorrow

I choked on my bacon

Me: what

Him: the sooner the better

Me: baby please

Him: if I let him go he is gonna think that everything
he did is okay and that is not okay with me

Me: warn him them ,threaten hi. Even , baby he has a
wife and kids

Him: he should've known better then , unlike him I am
fucken untouchable because I see everything that
comes at me

Okay when he gets cocky I fucken love it because it
makes me horny , and fuck I can't even do anything
about my itch

Me: just don't be as relentless then please baby

The monitor went off

Him: see your upsetting my baby you see ?

He ran upstairs and I lost my appetite and went upstairs to feed my baby I can't starve her

.
. .
.

Me: so your really leaving

He was getting dressed ,he looked so good if I was not upset he is leaving I would be drooling

Him: it has to be done baby

I was pouting , he would occasionally laugh because he thought I was being extra and I don't care if I was shame , he wore a black jeans and a black shirt, his cologne was out if this world because it filled the room , he took his man side back and put it on

Me: mxm you look do good

He laughed

Him: I know

Me: wa bora mara

Him: you love me

We went downstairs and I was holding aurora ,wait
wait wait

Me: baby are you going alone

He avoided my question and took the baby from me
Me: Mike

Him: yes I am going alone will you relax

Me: okay baby please be careful and vigilant because I
donâ€™t knowâ€™

Him: I will be careful and tomorrow morning I will be
back

Me: promise me

He reached for my neck and pulled me to him and we
kissed while he had aurora on the other hand

Him: relax my love who am I

Me: mike Anderson

Him: and I do what my love

Me: and you run the world my love

To be honest as cocky as that makes him seem it
soothes me when he says that or makes me say it ,he
have me the baby and wore his jacket and kissed us

both before he headed out

MIKE

It only took me 3 hours to arrive in cape town because I feel here , I found myself asking my driver to take me to Ndlovu's house my wife messed with my head a but that caused me to change my plans completely but nothing will go unsaid

Driver: were here sir

I bribed their guards and they let me in no questions asked , I didn't even bother knocking I used the kitchen door which I shot open ,but the gun had a silencer ,it was around 20:30 so they should still be awake ,he had a nice crib and I know They have cameras I am just hoping they don't see me because I want to shake them off their boots, I walked in and took water from their fridge and drank (I was thirsty okay) ,I sat on their counter and continued drinking ,a little girl came from upstairs

Lindo:who are you?

Me: hey sweetie go call your daddy for me ,is he sleeping

She just started dreaming and her parents both came running ,palesa ran to her daughter to calm her down and she eyes were dead set on me , palesa told lindo to go lock herself in the room and must not come out no matter what she hears and she obliged ,soon as she left the room I laughed

Me: please what donyiu think I am a monster

Pali: what are you doing her

I stood up from the counter and walked to sâ€™celo

Me: your men here knows what I am doing here or I hope he has the decency to know .

Him: get out of my house men my kids are here

Pali: please do whatever but donâ€™t .

I raised my hand tonight here up

Me: you know I had this all planned out ,I was going to kill your husband ,I mean no one ever messes with me and lube to tell the tale , I wanted you dead and I had everything in motion ,see this fancy house of yours ,it is placed with bombs everywhere , the kids were going to be at school and the wife somewhere shopping and they would have come back to nothing but ash you included but I had a child just a few days ago and with my wifeâ€™s pleading not to do anything to you I stopped everything because I know you did all that because I took something from you even though I let you buy it just for me to take . you see Ndlovu I am not the one you come afteryes chase your little rats and win but with me ,I am a whole different ball game , the money you cost me keep it , the money you took keep it, but if you dare come at me one more time I will make your wife a widow and leave your children fatherless but those diamonds I took your not getting them back and I dare you to come take them, I will turn you into an ancestor try me.

They looked hella shocked , I walked out, when I was at

the door ,I turned and shot him right next to his heart .

Me: next time I wonâ€™t miss ,palesa take your husband to the hospital

I walked out and we went straight or the airport after that

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

I got inside the covers just after checking on the aurora , I was about to shut my eyes when she started crying

Me: Aurora is awake

Her: you take her am tired

Me: babe am tired please

She didnâ€™t budge I think is a little mad at me

Her: are they dead

I went to went to check in her and girl was sucking her fist

Me : so your really going to wake up when I have to sleep huh baby

* I didnâ€™t want to talk about that famiky*

She made bubbles with saliva and I picked her up,
ainâ€™t no way am staying up ,I made her a little bed
with her blankets ,I out her on them and made her
mama turn , I took out her boob and fed my baby and
she was sucking on the boob ,she had no choice but to
adjust herself and hold the

Her:I hate you

I laughed and wrapped my legs with her she was very
warm

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Her: I have an exam babe I do have to go

Me: have you been studying

Her: yes but not as much as I wanted but I will survive
â€™.I pumped milk , and I wrote you all the meds she
needs to take with all the measures ,please make sure
that you donâ€™t shove the bottle in her mouth just let
it suck it

Me: baby itâ€™s okay just go ace that test and quickly
come back please

ZWELI

We came to babysit with Mike ,yet I donâ€™t want Mike to kill my niece what does he know about looking after a baby

Me: Hai Mike your suffocating her

She wrapped the baby wuth four blankets imagine, Menzi and layla were laughing

Layla: count me out because I am just as clueless

Mike: okay is the bottle ready

Me: I geuss we have something you canâ€™t do

Menzi:yeah you look so confused

They laughed at him

Me: I guess we found something you cannot do

We laughed again

INTERRACIAL LOVE

INSERT 82

A YEAR LATER

REFILWE

Yah neh ,this life thing we can never predict , so let me update you about my life and the people around me , so Jay and bontle officially got married and they went back to the state , my dad had a girlfriend (.weird) and he still stays at his house , my brothers are still around and we get along like a house on fire, Zweli and aphiwe are still madly in love and so is Layla and Menzi (I think layla is pregnant Not sure yet) and lastly Marc and Tumi broke up 7 months into their relationship but none if them are willing to tell us what happened â€¦..now me and husband were still Bonnie and Clyde, he is my ride or die ,donâ€™t get me wrong we fight and argue but he is my one true love so we work through shit

.
. .

Me: Aurora baby come

She has been learning how to crawl , see my baby thought teeth are more important than walking , she is a year and 6 months

Him: no baby come to daddy

Mike and I are on the fluffy Matt trying to see who aurora is going to choose, and this traitor crawls right into her fatherâ€™s arm

Me: youâ€™d swear I didnâ€™t push that big head if yours out if my Vagina

Mike laughed and was kissing his daughter

Him: baby donâ€™t be a sore loser you know she loves

me more

Me: mxm whatever , no work today

Him: yeah life at the office without you is hard

Me: I only said I am not coming today you didnâ€™t have to take a day off baby

Him: yeah we will go in tomorrow okay

Me: okay were the boss after all

Him: exactly

Yeah I work with my husband now can you believe him , he made his co CEO but I am just learning and getting experience to start my own company ,I have already started with the process yeah I have a rich men and all that but I want my own empire ,I was making lunch because my sister and aphiwe are coming over, they didnâ€™t say why but I just hope everything is okay with them

.
. .
. .
. .

Mike is holding aurora who is banging her hands in the table

Mike: les baby if you donâ€™t stop

Oh yeah Mike calls lesedi les or sedi sometimes

Zweli: she is becoming sassy lo

Phiwe: but she is so cute bethuna yoh

Me: so !??? Yâ€™™ all have been stalling what are you doing here

Zweli: haibo canâ€™™t I miss my sister

Mike laughs and wipes aurora hands and gives her a beef strip

Me: so how is work friend

Zweli: mxm why is she working vele

Phiwe: yaz Mike is the richest men I know but you donâ€™™t see him telling fifi she should not work

Mike: yoh no please donâ€™™t involve me

Zweli: yeah just know no wife of mine is working full time

Me: your so backward zweâ€™|â€™|.wait did you say wife

Phiwe raised her left hand exposing her ring

Me: holy shit

Mike: language baby â€™|..so how did he do it , I know he is not romantic

We laughed and she narrated the whole story to us and

my brother though

Me: no man congratulations am so happy for yâ€™™all

Mike: welcome to one pussy world

They laughed and I hug his chest , after lunch aphiwe and I washed the dished and cleaned around the kitchen

Me: have you seen Tumi lately babe I havenâ€™™t seen her in a while

Phiwe: I have but seems like she has new friends she hangs with , she says she wants nothing to do with Marc

Me: haibo we did nothing to her moss

Phiwe: exactly but I am letting her be I am just tired of fighting with her

Me: worse I didnâ€™™t know she was mad kanti what are friends for if you canâ€™™t talk to them

Phiwe: nah she hands with slay queens now and babe you canâ€™™t blame toured you have a family

Me: does she work

Phiwe: yeah she got a job as a personal assistant

Me: God am such a bad friend

Phiwe: itâ€™s okay man

I hugged again

Me: I am so happy for you chommie

Phiwe: who would have thought me married

Me: a whole diva

Phiwe: hai am still a diva kaloku

We laughed and high fived

.
. .
. .
. .

Were chilling in bed with aurora because moghel does not want to sleep at all

Les: mama â€¦..ma â€¦..ma

She usually babbles and says things that make no sense

Me: oh my baby your first clear word is mama
I say kissing her face all over oh my baby said mama

Him: your such a traitor though les , I thought I was your favourite

Me: looks like your not

I love my baby so much ,yoh I even decided that she is sleeping with us today.

Him: babe am soâ€¦.you know

Me: one night my love

He mumbled something and helped set aurora right and we slept, my life is complete

LAYLA

I am pacing around the room with a pregnancy test in my hand ,I thought I was being safe but guess not ,Menzi wants a baby I know that but I wanted to get married first we have been talking about getting married but were not yoh

I look at the test and itâ€™s positive, I sit in the edge of the bed â€œFUCK â€œ I say as I look at my flat tummy

.
. .
. .

I just got in bed and I am trying to sleep ,after some I feel the bed shifting and Menzi snakes his hand on my waist and kisses my neck

Me: am pregnant

I just say I couldnâ€™t hold it ,I think he froze a but not knowing what to say

Him: are you serious

He asks and I nod vigorously and he starts dounng his where happy dance in the bed ,he kisses my back and

neck

Him: thank you , thank you my love

Me: so you happy

Him:of course I am

he turned me look at him

Him:I couldn't be happy I mean I know you wanted to be married but were not and I promise you my love I am not going to abandon you or our baby

I snuggled closer to him and layed in his chest , I feel safe and warm with him

Me: am so scared

Him: am going to be here my love,I will never leave you for anything

Me: i know you would never leave me am so nervous

Him: if we need help my sister and your brother are here

Me: your right i should stop stressing

Him: yes you should , we should go to the doctor just to be sure you know ,and we need meds and all of that

MARCUS

my relationship with Tumi became strained after a while she thought I was not compromising and she said she was tired and left ,in all honesty i was hurt , I told her no one is ever going to have her and i think she thought I was joking but I was not , inhale shot three people in their legs threatning them to stay away from her ,and 3 hours ago i just shot some guy she has been seeing and she found out it was me but I couldn't care less i told her I will change but still she is seeing other men , she will have to survive being single.

I just got to my apartment ,I find the door open and i see her sitting on the counter , I walk in and take off my shirt

Me:what do.yoh want here tee

Her:what with you,whay are you threatning the people i try to date

Me: what did i say to you , I tho k you know I mean what i always say

Her: Marc we broke up

Me: well to be bed me and you are in it for life baby

I go and peck her lips and go take a shower

Her: GOD I HATE YOU

she says and i just laugh

Me: DRAMATIC MUCH

INTERRACIAL LOVE

FINAL INSERT

TUMI

I had to break up with Marc and yes I do love him but his sex needs just drove us apart , I understood but it just got too much for me may be one day we will find out way to each other again , I wanted to be away from him so I started pushing my friends away, but I miss them so much my friend is engaged and she didn't even care to tell me because I was hanging with a bunch of girls I met at work to be honest I feel really stupid ,and now She is moving out to live with her fianc© mad that to she didn't tell she just left me a note , on the other hand it's the Marc situation he really has been threatening each and every guy I meet , it's annoying me for really and mo'guy doesn't even care gee yhuu hai shame

I am witj my new friends her name is blessinh but we just call her bless , it's lunch time so we decided to eat out for lunch today

Her: yoh chommie I swear I would do anything he says do you notice how hot He is

Me: aowa mara glass imagine always saying yes master no master nna ke lapile

Her: yoh hai I wouldn't mind and he looks loaded

I laughed

Me: he is but still

We continued talking and laughing, my smile faded when I saw fifi , layla and aphiwe walking in the glow was too much yoh , when fifi saw me she handed her baby to Layla and ran to me ,she hugged me and kissed my lips (I never understood why she did that but I didnâ€™t mind)

Fifi:am sorry

She hugged me again, I honestly wanted to cry , trust her to apologise even though you are the one that made a mistake , she looked hot to ,she had in a knee high red pencil skirt with a black lace body suit , with a cropped blazer and black suede high heel

Me: what are you sorry for I should be the one apologizing for being a bitch

She turned to look at my friend and waved at her and turned back to me

Fifi: tonight come over my house okay ,Marc will be there too but we were friends so understand and i will ask him to stay ways from you please babe avail yourself

She kissed my cheek

Fifi: I will chase them Mike if there is a need

Me: okay can you talk to aphiwe for me

She nodded and left for her table

Her: that is Mike Anderson â€™s wife .

Me: Refilwe Anderson she is one of my best friends

Her: okay wow ,come lets go lunch is over

We went back to work I really have to fix my relationship with my friends I have to.

MIKE

I owe all my happiness to wife and baby girl see you can have all the money yoh have but still be lonely as hell ,but all that has changed and am a very happy men , I have people that I love and they love me genuinely love me too .

Today were having a friends and family dinner, we havenâ€™t hanged out in a while because we all have such busy lives, my mom and sister are good and we have a new baby sister her name is Britney Jean Anderson, my mom sends a bunch of pics and the women has a boyfriend and I keep tabs on that Antonio always , my sister is still working on herself ,as for layla I decided to back off because they even live together now there was nothing I could do me trying to break them apart brought them closer together

Her: Anderson I will punch you

I snap out of my thoughts and help her unpack the groceries ,I put aurora on her stomach , she pushed

herself with her stomach around the Matt we made sure there was nothing that was going to injure her
â€¦.I jog to my wife and kiss her forehead

Me: did you get everything you needed

Her: yeah am glad they are not fussy eaters I want to make something simple and easy I have been on my feet for a while

Me: So if thatâ€™s the case come Sit with us on the Matt

I say already pulling her by her hand , we sat and she took sedi and out her between her legs playing with her ,she would tickle and kiss her and sedi would giggle

Her: she is a ball of energy these days

Me: yeah speaking of we need to start baby proofing because little miss thing her wants to crawl

Her: yeah I have eveything we need in her room

What did I expect my wife is always at the top of her game , even at work she is always ahead of me ,how I donâ€™t know ,she posses so much strength and power that I am proud to call myself her husband ,when she walks she walks tall , when she is in.a room her presence is felt and noticed and when she speaks everyone listens ,thatâ€™s my wife for you â€¦ I keep on waiting to wake up from what seems like a dream but when my screams her lungs out I know that I am at my happy place ,partying and going out does not interest me like it used to, my family has become my

place if you and I would never change that for anyone .

REFILWE

I am hosting a dinner today for all of my friends ,I just talked to my dad over the phone and I video called my sister too ,life has been good to us and I really have my husband to thank and all the people that are close to me , Mike just had his shower and I was dressing my princess who has a lot to day this days , her mama's and dadaâ€™s just melt me and her dadâ€™s heart yoh nothing beats the feeling you have for your child

Him: baby are you done

Me: yes I am are you?

Him: yes I am

He kissed me and then kissed his daughter ,aurora was laughing and giggling ,I swear she laughs more when she is with her dad ,they are so close that I get jealous when they play and I have to be bad cop all the time

Me: come our guests are already downstairs

yes our friends have already arrived I was cooking and Mike was helping thatâ€™s why we were both delayedâ€™ | we went downstairs hand in hand ,he held aurora with his other

Me: hey guys

I go and kiss all my girls cheeks and my brothers

Marc: whatâ€™s this I also want my kiss

I hurry to him and kiss his cheek too

Mike: we havenâ€™t done this in such a long time

Zweli : life men

Menzi: but we should change that we canâ€™t become strangers

Me: yeah friends and family are important and I need you guys to keep sane

They laughed and we toasted

Zweli : to family

Mike: and friends

Click click click that was the sound of our glasses

We continued talking and having fun , I looked at them individually and how they bring their individual value and happiness to my life , Tumi is the calm to my storm , she will help you carry your burden but will never share her problems with you , then there is aphiwe my feisty diva she will be there for you no matter what ; she is that ride or die type of friend no matter the situation she will be there for you then there is layla we are nit really that close but I love that she love my brother unconditionally to a pint that she didnâ€™t mind when Menzi wanted her and her sister, she loves

him she beams with happiness since they have been together and I told menzi I will kill him if he ever dared to hurt her , then there is Marc the brother I never knew I had , he is rough around the edges but she will do anything for you ,and I know he always has my back no matter what , then my brothers how I love them and I know They love me back I know with them around I will always be protected through their love to a point that they don't mind baby sitting I am glad that even after everything we went through they were still here for me .

.

.

.

Me: aurora is sleeping come with me

I say pulling him to the balcony ,I had a little Matt and fleece with blankets , with a bottle of champagne and some fruits

Him:this is cute

I giggled and sat down ,he sat down behind me and wrapped his legs around me ,I layed my head back on his shoulders looking up the stars and enjoying him breathing through my neck

Me:I love you

Mike and I never had it easy but he was there for me and with me he is everything that I women will wish for and more , he completes me , without fifi there is no Mike and without Mike there is no fifi ,they day we got married he said to me that were not individuals anymore but we were one ,were not perfect but were

perfect for each other he completes me in every sense
of the word

Him:I love you more baby .

THE END